9004 h 25

A
VIEW
OF
UNIVERSAL
MODERN
HISTORY.

BRITISH MUSEUM

A VIEW OF UNIVERSAL *MODERN* HISTORY,

FROM THE FALL OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE.

VOL. II.

Tranſlated from the laſt Edition of the celebrated
CHEVALIER MEHEGAN,
By H. FOX.

Rerum cognoſcere cauſas. VIRGIL.

LONDON:

Printed for HOOPER and DAVIS, No. 25, Ludgate-Hill,
and G. ROBINSON, Pater-Noſter Row.
M DCC LXXVIII.

A VIEW OF UNIVERSAL MODERN HISTORY,

FROM THE EARLIEST ACCOUNTS OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE.

BRITISH MUSEUM

Translated from the last Edition of the celebrated

M. L. ROX.

LONDON:

Printed for Hooper and Davis, No. 25, Ludgate-Hill;
and G. Robinson, Paternoster Row.

VIEW
OF
Modern Univerſal Hiſtory.

REFLECTIONS.

RELIGION.

IDOLATRY no longer appeared in Europe. Chriſtianity and Mahometiſm were the two prevailing ſyſtems. The mahometan religion was nearly deſtroyed, its authority prevailed only in Egypt, over a part of the African coaſts, and in the little kingdom of Granada. The Tartars of Gengis had aboliſhed the pontificate, thrown the laſt califf of Bagdad into the ſea, and baniſhed that religion throughout the Weſt. It was reſtored by the victories of the Turks, and after reviving again in Aſia, paſſed into Europe, and aſcended the throne of Greece. The conqueſts of Tamerlane and his ſons, who were zealous adherents to that worſhip, ſpread it with ſucceſs beyond the Euphrates.

THUS, towards the cloſe of the fifteenth century, Mahometiſm extended almoſt as far as it does at preſent, and reigned from the Ganges to

the gulph of Venice. But while it thus triumphed by the arms of its followers, a new ſchiſm aroſe in Perſia, which produced in time the moſt ſurpriſing revolution. Iſmael Sophi, a man of obſcure condition, who pretended to derive his origen from Ali, ſon-in-law to the prophet, preached openly, that the law of Mahomet had been corrupted, and that he was inſpired by heaven to reſtore its purity. The alterations he propoſed, were, in fact, rational. He made a favourable interpretation to ſome articles of the Alcoran that appeared diſguſting; he rejected the abſurdities which the followers of Omar had inſerted; he baniſhed thoſe incommodious traditions that prohibited innocent pleaſures: by this means he acquired the approbation of men of ſenſe as well as thoſe who were voluptuous. His doctrine was ſupported by a pleaſing exterior, a ſort of natural eloquence, a mild behaviour, and auſterity of manners. His reputation was ſpread over all Aſia.

TAMERLANE, conceiving the higheſt veneration for him, deſired to ſee him. Having enquired of the apoſtle what favours he wiſhed to have conferred on him, Iſmael requeſted and obtained thirty thouſand ſlaves that had been collected in different countries, which the Tartar had in his train. As ſoon as he had the diſpoſal of thoſe unfortunate people, he releaſed them from their fetters, and ſet them at liberty; ſo that he, whom they dreaded as their maſter, proved a generous benefactor, who made their happineſs his ſtudy. Gratitude, the moſt powerful ſentiment with the wretched,

wretched, attached these strangers to his fortune; being persuaded that no man, who displayed such exalted proofs of his great virtue, could be an impostor, they blindly submitted their will, and even reason, to his direction.

Thus Ismael was at the head of a numerous body, devoted to his orders, and full of that confidence and resolution which enthusiasm always inspires. His ambition, perhaps, wanted nothing more than favourable circumstances. No occasion offered under the first successors of Tamerlane; he was, therefore, obliged to remain satisfied with the honour of having been the founder of a sect that was already grown powerful; and having spread itself in Asia, levelled a road for his family to the most elevated fortune.

Whether it was owing to the weakness of his son Guines, or to the want of opportunity, the sect made no sensible progress under that new chief; but Sech Edar, the worthy grandson of Ismael, resuming the projects of his grandfather, supporting them with similar talents, and adding great perfection to his doctrine, gave new vigour to the proselytes of his faction, and formed a kind of independent sovereignty in Ardevill, his native country.

Enthusiasm, a passion so easily infused into vulgar minds, spread the new sect to the most remote parts of Persia, and new disciples every day flocked in to devote their lives and fortunes to him. The famous Ussum Cassan, with a view, perhaps, of strengthening his infant state with the credit of a man whom Asia revered, and con-

vinced, moreover, that ſuperior merit ſhould ſet aſide the ordinary gradations of rank, was eager to ſecure his attachment by the cloſeſt ties, and give him his daughter in marriage. Eidar, thus raiſed to the higheſt honour, increaſed the reſpect he before enjoyed by his modeſt behaviour. He remained at Ardevill without any pomp or mark of diſtinction, perſiſting in his refuſal to appear at court, and making no other uſe of his influence and authority but to protect the unfortunate.

During the reign of his brother-in-law, Sophi continued to enjoy the charms of ſo flattering a ſituation, but the poſterity of the male line of Uſſum Caſſan becoming extinct, Ruſtan, no leſs daring than ambitious, ſeized the throne which the laws gave to Sophi. The uſurper, whoſe ſuſpicions made him dread the rights, the virtues, and even the moderation of his rival, formed the reſolution to exterminate him, with his family and followers. The ſect being proſcribed by the moſt bloody edicts, either hid themſelves in Perſia, or were diſperſed in the neighbouring kingdoms. Their chief was aſſaſſinated; two of his ſons fled to the Turks; a third, who was ſtill in the cradle, was protected from murder by the friends of his family, who carried him to the mountains of Hircania. We ſhall ſee him deſcend from thence, and glorioufly avenge the blood of his anceſtors; and the ſect of his uncle, which now actually trembled under the terrors of proſcription, ſhall appear again with this new Iſmael on one of the brighteſt thrones of Aſia.

CHRISTIANITY was likewiſe agitated with troubles and misfortunes. The eaſtern church had followed the revolutions of the empire. A counterfeit ſubmiſſion ariſing from neceſſity, ſeemed to have united her with her rival; but hatred for the Weſt growing more powerful than the idea of her misfortunes, her clergy broke every link that held her attached to Rome, and preferred the authority of a worſhip inimical to their principles. This church, bent under the Turkiſh yoke, will afford in future nothing intereſting, and the ſciences in which ſhe ſtill gloried, were on the point of vaniſhing with her liberties.

SECTS.

THE church of the Weſt now ſaw a ſtorm gathering, which was a melancholy preſage of the moſt fatal diviſions. In the reign of Edward III, Wickliff, an Engliſhman, a ſtudent, and doctor of Oxford, whoſe learning and capacity made him the oracle of the univerſity, had the boldneſs to form a project for deſtroying the power of the clergy. The raſh man who attempted this before him, had nothing to ſupport it but idle declamation and much fanatic zeal. Wickliff found a regular ſyſtem and defended it with logical arguments, the more formidable, as they were but little known in thoſe days. If credit may be given to the catholics, it was his reſentment for having been excluded from a profeſſorſhip which he had ſolicited, that provoked him to attack the churches: and if we believe proteſtants, his concern at ſeeing chriſtianity diſfigured with ſhocking

abuſes, inſpired him with the reſolution to oppoſe them. Whatever his motives might have been, the grounds of his doctrine were as follow:

"THE pope is not the head of the church, he "is no more than the firſt paſtor, and has no au- "thority over his colleagues. Prelates have no "right to excommunicate the faithful. No man "can be excummunicated, unleſs we are certain "that God himſelf has reprobated him. The "miniſters of religion have no more than a pre- "carious power, which they preſerve no longer "than while they are virtuous; by guilt they "forfeit their character, their privileges, and "their poſſeſſions. Revenues given to paſtors are "mere alms, which the faithful can and ought "to withdraw, when thoſe paſtors ſhew them- "ſelves unworthy of them. The ſtate and gran- "deur with which pontiffs are ſurrounded, the "pomp of which biſhops are ſo vain, thoſe trea- "ſures, ſlaves and caſtles, thoſe temporal juriſ- "dictions which they exerciſe with no leſs tyran- "ny than injuſtice, are all ſo many enormous "abuſes that make thoſe culpable who enjoy "them, and likewiſe thoſe who permit them. Prin- "ces, in ſtripping the clergy of thoſe uſurpations, "do but fulfil the intentions of our ſacred legiſlator.

"HOWEVER holy the founders of monaſtic "orders might have been, they ſinned in form- "ing thoſe criminal eſtabliſhments, which re- "moved men from the duties of ſociety, and "ſtifle future generations in the gulph of celi- "bacy. As to mendicant friars, if they deſire "ſanctity, they ſhould quit the wallet and take

"up

" up the ſpade, or make themſelves uſeful by
" ſome honeſt employment. By begging as they
" do, with no leſs meanneſs than effrontery, they
" rob thoſe who are real objects of charity, and
" act in direct contradiction to the behaviour of
" Jeſus Chriſt, who never ſet this curſed ex-
" ample.

" The euchariſt does not contain the body
" and blood of a god; it is no more than a
" pledge of his goodneſs to remind us of his fa-
" vours; but in order to make this image per-
" fect, the cup ſhould be reſtored to the faith-
" ful; it was a crime to have deprived them of
" it. We ought not to partake of this myſtery
" unleſs our hearts are free from all uncleanneſs.
" But it is vain to expect ſo great a happineſs
" from any merit of confeſſion, which is a ſuper-
" fluous ceremony: ſincere repentance is the only
" thing that can make us acceptable to the Su-
" preme Being."

Wickliff ſpread thoſe bold doctrines at firſt in private: he was, perhaps, aſtoniſhed himſelf at the rapid progreſs he made. Almoſt the whole body of the univerſity, either ſeduced by his arguments, or perſuaded by his erudition, adopted his ſentiments, and revered him as a reformer. Encouraged by this ſucceſs, he quitted Oxford, and travelled through England, preaching his opinions, walking barefoot, and ſetting an example of the pureſt morality, and followed by a prodigious number of diſciples.

The court of Rome, the biſhops and the monks, alarmed for their moſt precious intereſts, united

againſt him, and Wickliff was cited to appear before the dreadful tribunal of the primate. But he had powerful protectors, who intereſted themſelves for him. Edward III, diſſatisfied with the exceſſive authority of the clergy, ſupported him under hand; and the duke of Lancaſter, who, after the death of the king, held the reigns of authority during the minority of Richard II, openly protected the reformer. The thunders of the council were in vain pointed at the head of Wickliff; he continued preaching, and died quietly in the midſt of his followers. The univerſity of Oxford paid the greateſt honours to his memory. In a letter addreſſed to the whole collective body of the church, and to which the ſeal of the univerſity was affixed, the virtues and ſentiments of the doctor were juſtified. Richard, however, now no longer a minor, yielded to the ſolicitations of the pope. The bones of Wickliff were dug up and burned, his followers were proſcribed, and the ſect ſeemed to expire under the united blows of the ſovereign and the pontiff. But it only lay concealed in England, while it openly reared its head in another part of Europe.

A LEARNED Bohemian, who ſtudied at Oxford, had read and approved the writings of Wickliff. At his return to his native country, he had communicated them to John Hus the profeſſor, and to the eloquent Jerom. We have ſeen thoſe two friends give up their lives in defence of theſe new opinions. But their doctrine was neither deſtroyed in the flames which conſumed them at Conſtantia, nor in thoſe which Sigiſmund kindled, to puniſh

the companions of Ziſca. The ſubſtance of thoſe opinions had ſunk deep into the minds of people which ſprung up afterwards, and occaſioned the grand revolution we ſhall ſee burſt forth in the ſucceeding æra.

A VARIETY of ſects appeared at the ſame time, the greater part more abſurd than impious, and fitter objects of pity than the ſeverity of the church. The Flugellants pretended that baptiſm by water was uſeleſs, and that of flegellation was neceſſary to confer baptiſm of blood. Thoſe fanatics marched in proceſſion half naked, with ſcourges in their hands, lacerating their bodies in the moſt public places, with no leſs rage than indecency. The Begards preached that it was poſſible to arrive at ſo great a degree of perfection in this life, as to be incapable of ſin; and in their pious contemplations imagined they might innocently indulge themſelves in every ſpecies of exceſs.

MARGARET PORETTE of Flanders, refining upon this doctrine, maintained that the beſt means of aſcertaining our perfection in divine love, was to give a looſe to terreſtrial appetite, and to remain inſenſible in the midſt of its ſweeteſt enjoyments.

PICARD, the Dutchman, endeavourd to prove by the ſcriptures, that all women ſhould be common. Lollard, the German, pretended that the ſame authority made all men equal in power. Some of the Franciſcans boaſted that St. Francis had introduced into the world a more perfect goſpel than that of Jeſus Chriſt: others were ſo far intoxicated with the notions of renunciation, recommended by their rules, that they inſiſted their very

very food, while they were making uſe of it, belonged to the pope. Others reſted their ſalvation on a grey or black, a larger or ſmaller habit, or a hood more or leſs pointed. One can hardly imagine with what obſtinacy thoſe madmen ſupported their opinions. It is no leſs difficult to comprehend the rage with which they were perſecuted. Humanity ſhudders at the bare recollection of the fires kindled by the clergy in every part of Europe. Thouſands of victims were conſumed for trifling diſputes, which perſecution multiplied, and contempt would have ſtifled.

In the controverſy, with regard to the hood, numbers of cordeliers were burned in France, Germany and Italy. John XXII, gravely obſerved, that fire and ſword were the only remedies for this diſorder. The ſame remedies were employed againſt the Jews. On the moſt trifling pretence, on the mere faith of popular rumour, they were plundered, baniſhed, and often puniſhed with the moſt cruel death and torments. If a prince happened to die ſuddenly, the Jews were accuſed of having deſtroyed him by witchcraft. If an epidemic diſorder broke out in a province, the Jews had poiſoned the wells and ſprings. Sometimes they were charged with having offered indignities to a conſecrated hoſt, or ſacrificing a chriſtian child to their hatred. Thoſe abſurd calumnies, which we are aſtoniſhed to find ſtill in ſome writers of a modern date, were produced without proofs, and credited on the teſtimony of the populace, became a pretext for inflicting the moſt inhuman tortures.

RELI-

RELIGIOUS ORDERS.

FEWER religious orders were now founded. The number of the old was ſo conſiderable, that there was ſcarce room for more. Beſides, the paſſion for thoſe eſtabliſhments began to abate. We muſt, however, remark two introduced in Italy, which have continued. The Celeſtins had for their founder the venerable Peter de Mouron, who experienced happineſs in the hermitage to which he had devoted himſelf, who felt uneaſineſs on the throne, to which the fame of his ſanctity had raiſed him, and who found death in the abdication which his moderation had ſuggeſted.

THE moſt profound humility preſided at the inſtitution of the Minims, who followed the rule of St. Francis of Paula. This man, without talents, learning or protection, became famous throughout all Europe by his extraordinary piety. Lewis XI, invited him to France, from a notion that God would prolong the life of a tyrant at the entreaty of ſo virtuous a man. The pious hermit appeared at court, and was admired for his candour and reſolution; his candour, in confeſſing that miracles were above his power; his reſolution, in ſhewing to the terrible prince, the grave already gaping to devour him.

MANY orders were reformed, and ſome ſuppreſſed. The moſt remarkable ſuppreſſion was that of the Templars. One hundred and eleven knights were burned in two councils. Neither a venerable old age, his illuſtrious deſcent, nor eſſential ſervices done to religion, could preſerve the

the grand maſter from a ſimilar fate, and the brother of a ſovereign prince was conſumed at a ſtake. They were ſentenced by the firſt prelates of the kingdom in a ſolemn aſſembly, held under the auſpices of Philip *the Fair*, and of Clement V; but whether the Templars deſerved this rigorous treatment is ſtill a queſtion not eaſily reſolved. Thoſe who could not be perſuaded that a pope and and a king of France would deliberately unite in ſuch a horrid barbarity, without ſufficient reaſon, have pronounced the knights guilty. Others, who imagined they ſaw a manifeſt partiality in the judges, had not the leaſt doubt of the innocence of thoſe unhappy men. The extinction of the order was juſt, but the mode of execution was tyrannical.

We cannot entertain a doubt of the avarice, rapaciouſneſs, injuſtice, debaucheries, and even rebellious diſpoſitions of thoſe monks, who were opulent, powerful, and accuſtomed to the uſe of arms. Their ſuppreſſion was therefore juſt. But as to the enormities that ſerved as a pretext for the rigorous proceedings againſt them, the bare relation of them will expoſe their fallacy. It was alledged that the fraternity, at their admiſſion, were forced to abjure the chriſtian religion, and to pay adoration to an idol of hideous deformity; becauſe one of their grand-maſters, who was taken priſoner by the Saracens, had recovered his liberty on that condition alone, that he ſhould make the whole order accomplices in his apoſtacy. It was, moreover, added, thar the very knights were obliged to ſuffer and commit every horror that

corrupt

corrupt paſſions could ſuggeſt, in their moſt violent exceſſes. Who can ſuppoſe that men, many of whom were the ſons of ſovereign princes, could tamely liſten to ſuch ſhameful conditions, and devote themſelves to a body where infamies of ſo groſs a nature made part of their laws. How can we imagine that a whole ſociety of men, by the ſimple authority of a grand maſter, who was very far from being abſolute, ſhould immediately conſent to renounce every principle of honour and religion. The confeſſion extorted from the lips of ſome of thoſe unfortunate people, proves nothing. We all know that torture or the hopes of life, will force the moſt innocent to acknowlege themſelqes guilty. Beſides thoſe who had been ſo weak, retracted their words at the hour of death. When faſtened to the ſtake they loudly proteſted their innocence, exclaimed againſt the injuſtice of their tyrants, and implored the aſſiſtance of an avenging God. In a word, a numerous council held in Spain, after a long conſultation on the matter, confiſcated indeed the property of the Templars, but acquitted them of the crimes laid to their charge.

HONORARY ORDERS.

In proportion as the paſſion for founding monaſtic orders abated, the deſire of eſtabliſhing others of a different nature increaſed. Thoſe were marks of honour that attached the nobles more cloſely to their ſovereigns. This ambition prevailed with all the princes of Europe. There was not a duke or a count but had a particular order

order to decorate their dependents. The greater part of thoſe inſtitutions died away; ſome ſtill ſubſiſt with ſplendor; as the order of Chriſt, inſtituted by Denis of Portugal, which the nobility of that kingdom ſtill think an honour to wear. Such is that of the annunciation, formerly called Lacs d'amour, or Love-knot; eſtabliſhed by Amedeus VI, in Savoy, which continues to diſtinguiſh birth and merit. That of St. Michael, which owed its inſtitution to Lewis XI, and which the monarchs of France have joined to another of a more auguſt and modern date. Edward III, inſtituted that of the garter, ſtill the moſt eminent enſign of honour worn in England: It is known to every body how that great king had picked up the garter of the beautiful counteſs of Saliſbury, and ſeeing the lady alarmed at an action that might create ſuſpicion of her virtue, cried out, that he would make the garter a glorious ornament. He immediately inſtituted that famous order, of which the motto alludes to the circumſtances from whence it originates. In ſhort, the moſt illuſtrious was that of the Golden Fleece, which owed its birth to an occaſion ſomewhat ſimilar, and was created by Philip *the good*, Duke of Burgundy, an order that now ſubſiſts in the greateſt ſplendor. Two of the firſt princes in Europe, diſputing the honour of being the head of it.

EMPIRRES AND THEIR REVOLUTIONS.

THE moſt ſtriking revolution we meet with is the fall of the Grecian Empire. In order to diſcover

diſcover the true cauſes that produced this, we muſt go back as far as ancient Rome. The wiſdom of the Roman people is continually extolled. We are accuſtomed from our very infancy to look up to every thing that belonged to them, with a kind of veneration. Let us for a moment diveſt ourſelves of thoſe prejudices, and take a curſory view of facts. Rome, under its firſt king, exhibits nothing but a ſociety of robbers, equally ſtrangers to laws, manners and arts. Numa leſſened their ferocity by religious illuſions, that were ſo far uſeful; but ſtill there were no fixed laws, no regular form of government. Hoſtilius entirely devoted to war, was far from paying any attention to a legiſlature. Tarquin I, employed all his time in conciliating the hearts of a people who had crowned the wiſdom of a ſtranger, becauſe he was ſomewhat leſs ignorant than themſelves. Servius, one of the wiſeſt princes that ever reigned, was deſirous of introducing ſome order, inſtead of the confuſion, that till then involved every thing; but ſenſible that a people, ſo ignorant and intractable, were in no condition to govern themſelves, and not daring to ſubject them openly, he had recourſe to art, and threw all the authority into the hands of a few who compoſed the ſenate.

TARQUIN *the proud*, ſetting no bounds to his violence, totally ſubverted the edifice raiſed by his father-in-law, and enſlaved the ſenate as well as the people. The revolution effected by Brutus, though it really deſtroyed the tyranny of the monarch, was, however, far from reſtoring liberty

to

to the people. The order of Patricians resumed the whole authority, and the national yoke became, perhaps, more oppressive than ever. This truth may appear a paradox to those who are continually extolling the first ages of the commonwealth, but will be evident to those who view with an impartial eye, the real condition of the plebeians in those days. All the nobility had the exclusive right to all dignities; the greatest part of the lands was in the possession of their families, the money all centered in their hands by the increase of usury; almost all the citizens became debtors to those tyrants, were dragged from their houses to prisons, loaded with indignities, and scourged like the most abject slaves. One escaped from the hands of a senator who kept him confined, flew to the market-place, called the people together, gave the strongest proofs of his character, valour, and integrity; he stripped himself, and shewed wounds in various parts that he had received, while under the standard of his country, and at the same time his body lacerated with scars, made by the lash of his inhuman creditor. In a word, oppression rose to such a height, that the people who were restrained from doing justice to themselves, out of a blind veneration for the senate, unanimously resolved to quit a city where they were exposed to such cruel tyranny, and retired to Mount Aventin. Nothing but the art of Memmius, or the esteem which his virtues inspired could prevail on them to return to the city. They returned on condition that protectors should be allowed them in certain magistrates then firstcreated under the

name

name of tribunes. If the people found temporary relief by this inſtitution, the whole nation was not the leſs wretched. As there was no real law, and every thing was determined in an arbitrary manner, violence and intrigue convulſed the ſtate, and diſorder ſprung from anarchy as it had been formed by oppreſſion. Weary of this horrid confuſion, they at length thought of ſending to Athens in ſearch of laws and a form of government; ſo true it is that they had not the leaſt idea of either at Rome. Magiſtrates were created with the name of decemvirs, to collect and reduce them to writing; men ſo ignorant and uncultivated muſt have made a prepoſterous collection. The pride, crimes, and exceſſes of Appius and his colleages are known to every body. It was found neceſſary to aboliſh this odious magiſtracy, and return to conſuls and tribunes, but this did not produce more tranquility. The tribunes oppoſed the ſenate, the ſenate the tribunes; there was no equilibrium between thoſe two powers, who being nearly equal, continually fought with alternate ſucceſſes and diſappointments. They were two powers, who being blind, unjuſt, and inflamed with mutual rage, were capable of ſubverting every thing, in order to deſtroy each other. The people excited by their magiſtrates, baniſhed and proſcribed the moſt illuſtrious ſenators; the ſenators, plundered, tormented, and oppreſſed the moſt innocent citizens. The tribunals were pulled down, the conſular robes torn, and the ſeats of the tribunes ſtained with blood. The patricians, with ſtaves in their hands, drove the citizens be-

fore them, who attempted to oppoſe their injuſtice; the populace ſhowered ſtones on the heads of the moſt reſpectable patricians, who offered to reſtrain their fury. Thoſe were the ſcenes exhibited in the four firſt ages of the Roman republic. From this external confuſion, however, proceeded external proſperity; the ſenators finding no method to free themſelves from thoſe factions more effectual than to ſend the citizens from home, expited thoſe continual wars, which extended ſo far the limits of the empire. But this expedient occaſioned another evil. In order to attack powerful enemies four hundred leagues diſtant from the capital, it was neceſſary to ſend out great and numerous armies, and to let them remain a long time under the orders of the ſame general, who had an unlimited authority. Men are always ambitious when they can be ſo with impunity. Thoſe commanders had all the time and opportunity neceſſary to conciliate the attachment of the troops. Thus maſters of the ſoldiers, after enjoying for ſeveral years the ſweets of independence and the pleaſure of commanding, followed by men devoted to them, they returned to Rome, not to obey, but to dictate with the imperious authority of maſters. Sylla firſt ſet the example; Pompey and Craſſus ſoon followed; at length Cæſar, more intelligent, more active, and more beloved than any of his predeceſſors laid ſo effectually the yoke on the people, that they remained ſlaves ever after. It is then evident that Rome continually ſhifted from anarchy to deſpotiſm, from deſpotiſm to anarchy, and thence ſunk into ſlavery. That people

ſo

ſo much extolled, and ſo renowned for their wiſdom, were continually deficient in the moſt eſſential point. Their government was always defective, or rather they had no government. They were ſtrangers to that happy ballance which is preſerved by fixing the authority of each claſs, and by a combination of powers acting upon the different orders of the ſtate, whereby they mutually oblige each other to contribute to the general welfare. It is eaſy to conceive how much thoſe diſorders muſt have increaſed under the ſucceſſors of Auguſtus, who were almoſt all tyrants, fools, and cowards. The confuſion roſe to extremity after the happy reign of Antoninus. The conſtitution was merely military, and revolutions were frequent; violence, avarice, perfidy, with every other crime, made and ſupported the emperors.

When Conſtantine removed his court to Conſtantinople, he carried thoſe vices with him, which were promoted by the temper of the Greeks, naturally vain, fickle and ſeditious. Superſtition added new misfortunes and troubles, of which it is generally a moſt abundant ſource. The throne of Conſtantinople was now nothing more than a theatre of the moſt ſtupid and barbarous ſcenes. Is there any wonder that ſuch a conſtitution ſhould ſink under the blows of a ſultan, who might be compared with the greateſt heroes of antiquity, and under the ſwords of a people blindly devoted to their maſter, trained up in continual wars, and inflamed by the enthuſiaſm of religion, and by the image of the moſt ſplendid triumphs? We ſhould rather wonder how the empire of Greece could have

ſubſiſted ſo long, and it is this phenomenon we ſhould inveſtigate.

The ſituation of Conſtantinople was the only thing that preſerved her for ſo many ages. The barbarians who deſtroyed the Roman empire, came chiefly from the northern extremities of Europe. They eaſily penetrated into the weſtern provinces through Poland and Germany, where no ſeas obſtructed their progreſs, ſo they had nothing to oppoſe them but the legions, who were overpowered by their numbers. Theſe barbarians had neither ſhips or any idea of navigation; Venice proves this remark. That republic was formed by ſome men who retreated to the neighbouring iſlands, in order to avoid the rage of the Huns. In this retreat they enjoyed tranquility, founded a powerful city, and acquired riches more than ſufficient to tempt the avidity of the Goths and Lombards. Nevertheleſs, they were never diſturbed by thoſe rapacious people, notwithſtanding the great proximity of their ſituation. It was not only neceſſary to croſs the Mediterranean ſea or the gulph of Venice, to attack the empire of the eaſt, but a happy prejudice likewiſe perſuaded them that the Black-ſea and the Palus Meotis, extended to the weſt and north, and formed a boundleſs ocean. Beſides the greateſt part of this empire was compoſed of the iſlands of the Archipelago and the Levant. The capital itſelf ſituate on the ſea, became impregnable as long as her port was not blocked up by a fleet. It is therefore not ſurprizing that the empire of the Eaſt ſhould have eſcaped the irruption of the firſt barbarians, who were

were total ſtrangers to that element. When the Turks, who were more numerous, and warriors of a quite different nature, advanced towards the Weſt, the Greeks held out againſt them while they could not paſs the Boſphorus; but as ſoon as ever the Genoeſe, influenced by avaritious motives, which made them deteſtable to all Europe, hadlent a fleet to Amurat I, the empire of Greece was deſtroyed. The ſultan took Adrinople, the ſecond city of the ſtate, and Bajazet his ſon marched to beſiege Conſtantinople. It would have then fallen under the Ottoman yoke, but for the diviſion occaſioned by the chriſtians in Hungary, and the misfortunes which the conqueror experienced in Aſia. The Ottoman family had ſcarce recovered from thoſe diſappointments, when the Peleologues tottered on the throne; and it was from motives of pity that Amurat II, contented himſelf with impoſing a tribute on them. His ſucceſſor ſignalized the firſt years of his reign by deſtroying that empire for ever.

The ruin of the Arabs in Spain is a new object of reflections. This part of Europe was the theatre on which zeal between two warlike nations of different religions was diſplayed in the ſtrongeſt light. Actions more memorable never, perhaps, were performed. The neceſſity they were under of engaging continually, had formed as many heroes as there were inhabitants in each city. In the bloody reſentment which inflamed both parties, nothing was neglected that might contribute to their mutual extermination. Stratagems, treachery, courage, ſacrifices of cruelty, unheard of

heroic actions, every thing was employed on each ſide. If the Spaniſh nation made a more brilliant figure, ſhe owed it, perhaps, to the good fortune ſhe had to tranſmit the relation of thoſe matters to poſterity. There is reaſon to think that the annals of the Moors would convey different ideas of many facts. It is eaſy to ſee that national prejudice had certainly altered ſome events, and which evident contradictions ſhould make us value accordingly. Out of numberleſs inſtances, we ſhall relate one only: a Miramolin of Morrocco paſſed over into Andoloufia, with a reſolution to conquer Spain. He had with him an army of four hundred thouſand men, an army triumphant from Afric, and re-inforced by the junction of the Moors in Europe, who were trained up in perpetual action. The experienced African pitches his camp advantageouſly on an eminence that commanded a moſt extenſive plain.

The chriſtians march out to meet him, they are but a handful in compariſon to the prodigious numbers of the enemy. Notwithſtanding all this they attack them, and meet with an obſtinate reſiſtance. They at firſt give way, then rally again, and after painful efforts gain a little ground; their courage revives; they aſcend, and puſh forward to Miramolin. In this ſituation they are expoſed to all the arrows of the Moors; the latter make uſe of the advantage: both armies cloſe; the battle is diſputed with all the fury imaginable. The chriſtians give way on all ſides. Their ſituation is ſo deſperate, that the king of Caſtile, thinks death the only honourable refuge left him. The

combat

combat in the mean time is renewed, and continues a whole day. In ſhort, the Moors are at length forced to fly, after loſing a hundred thouſand of their men. Is it not evident to the leaſt diſcerning, that an action ſo obſtinate and tedious, which coſts ſo much blood, muſt have been deſtructive to the victors? yet, if we give credit to the hiſtorians of Caſtile, the chriſtians loſt but twenty or thirty men. Is it poſſible for four hundred thouſand of any people that we can ſuppoſe, to be defeated by a number ſo very inferior, to loſe a hundred thouſand, and to deſtroy but twenty or thirty of their enemies. And who are thoſe four hundred thouſand? ſoldiers accuſtomed to the fatigue and dangers of war, and who make ſuch a gallant reſiſtance, that victory appears a long time to favour them. They are the flower of that nation whoſe heroic actions are celebrated before and after this affair. In one word, we are told, the battle in queſtion laſted a whole day. Should we place an implicit faith in the annals of Spain, when they ſpeak of the Moors? We ought rather to ſeek their character in the knowlege and ſciences which they have tranſmitted to us in the monuments we have remaining of their induſtry, and in facts that are probable.

The Moors have the honour of being the firſt who revived the ſciences in the Weſt. They have had extravagant flatterers, and unjuſt enemies; we ſhall endeavour to aſcertain their real merit. The ſcience of calculation owes them eternal obligations. They invented thoſe figures

which bear their name, and which ſupplied the place of thoſe tedious and perplexing operations of the Greek and Roman figures.

THE mathematics are indebted to that people for their improvements, which aſtoniſh the imagination: they diſcovered algebra, which is the only clue men have to guide them in the labyrinth of infinity. But if they had the merit of this diſcovery, they had not the honour of making a proper advantage of it. The mathematics made but ſlender progreſs in their hands. They reſtored aſtronomy; ſeveral words uſed in that ſcience, and derived from their idiom, are proofs of their taſte for that ſtudy; but they diſgraced its utility by continual blending it with judicial aſtrology, of which their greateſt men were paſſionate admirers. They were unacquainted with natural philoſophy: their works on this ſubject are nothing but an aukward repetition of the writings of Ariſtotle, to whoſe errors they added many of their own. They cultivated phyſic with ſome ſucceſs, but their notions, in regard to ſympathies, the favourite dogma of their ſchools, continually retarded their progreſs. They, in a manner, created chymiſtry, and the extravagant reſearches to which they devoted themſelves, prevented them from making ſome uſeful diſcoveries in that branch. They were ſtrangers to painting and ſculpture. Their religion, which forbid images, no doubt prevented the exerciſe of thoſe fine arts among them. Architecture was a favourite paſſion which they purſued with ardour.

SPAIN

SPAIN is full of monuments that ſhew their ſtile of building. They had no idea of the Grecian and Roman beauties; thoſe were ſupplied by the boldneſs of deſign and delicacy of execution. If their works of this kind diſcover no taſte, we muſt allow they ſhew great art and invention.

POETS flouriſhed among them; but they never underſtood true poetry, and in what real eloquence conſiſted. They abounded with energy, metaphors and allegories, of which they were prodigal; introduced them without choice and often without probability, and ſpoiled their poems and romances. In their works of this nature, were, however, the happieſt fictions, and the moſt intereſting ſituations. In a word, this people had much knowlege and more fancy; but taſte never governed their imagination, and their knowlege generally wanted accuracy and judgment.

MUCH has been ſaid of their politeneſs and generoſity: we ſhall give an inſtance of both. A numerous army, led by the moſt valiant officers of that nation, laid ſiege to an important city. A princeſs, who commanded in the place, after making a brave defence, was on the point of being forced to ſurrender, ſent a herald to the Moors, with orders to tell them, ſhe was ſurpriſed that the moſt valiant and generous knights in the univerſe, ſhould ſo eagerly ſeek the paltry honour of ſubduing a woman, and taking her place of refuge. A council of war being called on the occaſion, it was decided, that their proceedings were certainly againſt the laws of gallantry, and they concluded to raiſe the ſiege. All the ſatisfaction the knights required,

required, was the honour of ſeeing the princeſs: as ſoon as ſhe appeared on the walls, they filed off before her, praiſing her beauty, and giving her every mark of reſpect and admiration. Thus the city was delivered.

THE valour of the Arabs in Spain is incontrovertible. The annals, even of their rivals, are filled with exploits of theirs that are aſtoniſhing. In general wars, as well as in private quarrels, they behaved like heroes; and the worthy rivals of a Roderigo, a Sancho, and an Alphonſus.

How happened it that a people ſo enlightened, ſo induſtrious and ſo brave, were ſubdued by enemies who had not more courage, and who had leſs knowlege. We muſt firſt obſerve, that the Saracens were more divided. Every city had its particular ſovereign: the chriſtian kingdoms always comprehended ſome provinces; beſides, the Mooriſh princes were more diſunited; the Spaniſh kings, indeed, fought together ſometimes, but united again on the firſt appearance of their common enemy. The Moors, blind in their mutual animoſity, fought at the ſame time againſt the chriſtians, and againſt their own people.

GRENADA was inveſted by Ferdinand, and the thunders which growled round the wretched throne on every ſide, could not prevent the uncle and nephew from turning their arms againſt each other. They preferred burying themſelves under the ruins of a flouriſhing country, even to a temporary reconciliation. In fine, in the Spaniſh kingdoms very few or no muſſulmen were ſuffered to remain. They had nothing, therefore, to apprehend

prehend from their king, treachery, or open rebellion; while, on the contrary, Mooriſh ſtates ſwarmed with chriſtians, and thoſe domeſtic enemies were continually endeavouring to deſtroy their maſters, and ready to open the gates of their cities, whenever the ſtandard of Caſtile, or the ſigns of their faith appeared.

NOTWITHSTANDING thoſe very great diſadvantages, the Arabs diſputed their ground for eight hundred years. We ſhall ſee the moſt bloody proſcription baniſh thoſe people and their religion from Spain. It is the only place where mahometaniſm, once eſtabliſhed, has ceaſed to be the prevailing worſhip. The power of the popes preſent us with a much more important revolution. At the commencement of this æra, their authority knew no bounds; every thing bowed before the empire of the Keys. To judge by the pomp which ſurrounds the pontifical throne, we cannot diſcover any dimunition of their power during the ages we have lately turned over. Boniface VIII, decreed that kings were ſubject to him even in temporal affairs; that pontiff adorned his tiara with a ſecond crown, which he added to that his predeceſſors had already placed on it, and Benedict XII, decorated it with a third. At the entrance of Celeſtin V, two kings held the bridle of his aſs. Jane, queen of Naples, was obliged to plead her cauſe before the court of Avignon. The court of Rome arbitrarily determined the pretenſions that aroſe with reſpect to the ſame crown.

THE kings of France and England, in making a treaty together, ſubjected the infractor of the

peace

peace to the cenſures of the holy ſee. The emperor of Conſtantinople, the only chriſtian monarch who had not given way to the pontiff, repaired to France, in order to humble himſelf before Eugene IV. Paul II, a man very fond of ſurrounding his throne with pomp, granted new honours to the ſacred college, and raiſed the cardinals to a level with kings. The popes aſſumed rights, with regard to livings and benefices, that were unknown to former ages. They conferred thoſe favours without conſulting either ſovereigns, or the people; they ſent eccleſiaſtics from Avignon or Rome to every part of Europe, to take poſſeſſion of pariſhes, prebends, and even biſhoprics, as they became vacant. Without waiting for the death of the incumbent or poſſeſſor, they ſhamefully granted reverſions to the courtiers they had about them. Their legates travelled through every quarter, diſtributing indulgences, exacting tenths, and exhauſting the countries by taxes, which they gathered under the name of collections. Notwithſtanding all this ſeeming power, their real authority viſibly declined; and thoſe deſpots, who were ſo abſolute in the reign of Rodolph I, had ſcarce any of the privileges of a ſovereign under Frederic IV.

KINGS began to feel the weight of the yoke, and had the courage to ſhake it off. Rodolph refuſed to go to Rome to receive the imperial crown, though cited by the pope: nor did he therefore eſteem his title leſs valid. The Germanic body, ſhortly after, at a ſolemn diet, declared that the coronation was a mere ceremony, which added nothing

nothing to the rights of the prince. Peter III, of Arrogan, openly braved the anathemas of the vatican, and Peter IV, made a jeſt of them. Alphonſus of Portugal, treated the cenſure paſſed on him, on account of his divorce, with public contempt. His ſubjects, nevertheleſs, kept within the bounds of their duty. Philip *the Fair* nobly avenged the inſult offered to his dignity and rank; and the whole nation ſharing in his reſentment, publicly vindicated the independence of their ſovereign.

Charles V, forbid every one, under the ſevereſt penalties, to make application to Rome, in order to obtain benefices. Lewis XI, would not even permit the legates to exerciſe any functions, or introduce any decrees from the holy ſee into his dominions, without having firſt obtained the conſent of the prince; and this reſolution was ratified and entered in the public records. The doctors of Paris broke the heart of Clement VII, by their ſpirited remonſtrances. The divines of Oxford warmly protected the moſt zealous and the moſt formidable enemy of the pontificate. Even the very councils themſelves roſe up againſt Roman deſpotiſm. The fathers of Conſtantia propoſed the moſt vigorous regulations, and behaved in every reſpect as the natural reformers of the popes, tried, and even puniſhed them. The council of Bale, explaining the intentions of the former, pronounced in clear and expreſs terms, that the general aſſemblies of the church were ſuperior to the pontiff, and had a right to diveſt him of dignity and authority, whenever he abuſed them. In

ſhort,

ſhort, the weſtern church adopted new ideas with regard to the authority of her ſupreme pontiff, and that power which had exceeded all bounds, was now nearly confined within its juſt limits.

THE firſt cauſe of this revolution proceeded from the very exceſs of greatneſs. Men bend under the yoke, while the weight is not oppreſſive; the moment it becomes too heavy, they ſhake it off with indignant fury. The pope ſent a legate to England with an imperious demand of money to ſupport his luxury: "*Holy Father*," ſaid a cardinal on the occaſion, "we treat the chriſtian kingdoms as "the prophet Balaam treated his aſs. I fear they "will at length imitate the example of that ani-"mal, who, by repeated blows, ſpoke afterwards "in a terrible manner."

THE removal of the ſee by Clement V, was another cauſe of weakening that authority. The people, who are more attached to words than things, had not the ſame veneration for the pope when he no longer reſided in the city, which they conſidered as the natural ſeat of religion. Complaints on account of this alteration may be ſeen in Petrarch, they were no more than the eccho of the murmurs of thoſe times. Beſides, ſurrounded by kings, or powerful ſovereigns, whoſe juriſdiction extended to the very gates of Avignon, a city abſolutely without defence, were obliged to ſubmit to an aſcendant which time ſtrengthened.

CERODE, a man of obſcurity, at the head of a a parcel of deſperate adventurers, marched to Avignon, and after exacting immenſe contributions from the pope and his court, forced him to

give

give him abſolution, and to admit him to his table. Moreover all the pontiffs who reſided in that city being Frenchmen, and moſt of them eager to accumulate honour on the heads of their families, were under the neceſſity of ſhewing more pliancy to the deſires of theſe princes on whom thoſe men depended. The great ſchiſm of the Weſt, was a third cauſe of the decline.

EUROPE had leſs reſpect for a dignity that was divided, and for the popes whoſe powers were not clearly aſcertained. Add to this, that each pope, deſirous of augmenting his juriſdiction, endeavoured to conciliate the intereſt of ſovereigns, by conceſſions which tended to leſſen the authority of his place. The ſovereigns, on their ſides, ſold their own ſubmiſſion, and that of their ſubject as dear as poſſible. Perpetual and fixed tribunals then erected in almoſt every ſovereignty, was another cauſe of the weakneſs of the popes. Thoſe bodies commiſſioned to attend cloſely to the preſervation of the rights of the monarchy, and the privileges of the people, kept a continual eye on the proceedings of the church of Rome, and were always vigilant and ready to give the alarm, upon the leaſt diſcovery of any attempt being made that ſeemed injurous to the truſt repoſed in them. In fine, learning and ſcience appearing in the Weſt, gave a mortal blow to the abuſes that had been introduced in the ages of ignorance. Men of knowlege and merit enquired into the monuments of more early ages, traced back the line of tradition, meditated on the writings of the infant church, religiouſly examined the doctrine of thoſe venerable

times

times that approached ſo near the fountain of their worſhip, and by the lights of criticiſm detected thoſe fallacious works that had promoted ſuperſtition. By this means the primitive doctrine was reſtored with part of its original purity, and the ancient and prudent diſcipline that made the head of the church a reſpectable ſovereign inſtead of a hateful deſpot.

THE extravagant authority of the clergy fell with that of their chief. The learned Cuignieres, in the midſt of a national aſſembly, attacked their dangerous immunities.

INVINCIBLE arguments proved unſucceſsful, through the weakneſs of the monarch; they made a deep impreſſion, however, on the minds of people, and triumphed afterwards in happier and more vigorous reigns. The limits of the two powers were at laſt diſcovered, and uſurpations partly deſtroyed. An appeal to a general council, no leſs eſſential to public tranquility than to the ſecurity of the throne, paſſed into a law, and was entered in the public records. Excommunications were leſs frequent and more juſt. The clergy were deprived of the greateſt part of the cauſes they had before artfully drawn to their tribunal. Biſhops were excluded from temporal courts, and obliged to confine themſelves within the circle of ſpiritual affairs. The clergy became ſubjects, becauſe they were obliged to ſubmit to the laws; and the ſarcerdotal office, which ought to be conferred on virtue alone, was no longer a title to protect guilt from the hands of juſtice.

In the government of the empire of Germany, but little alterations appeared, it only acquired more conſiſtency and was better aſcertained. By the golden bull of Charles IV, ſcarce any innovation was made. The general adminiſtration, ſuch as it had been from the time of Rodolph, was only more clearly eſtabliſhed. It continued nearly the ſame down to the reign of Charles V.

France exhibited many changes. Burgeſſes of cities, at firſt, had no ſhare in the adminiſtration, and the common people were abſolute ſlaves. Things altered under Philip *the Fair*. The deputies of cities were admitted into the general aſſemblies, had votes there, and counterbalanced the power of the nobles. Thoſe aſſemblies regulated all important affairs; reformed ſuch abuſes as were injurious to the general order; diſmiſſed officers who were found guilty of miſdemeanors, and ſettled all taxes the prince might levy upon the ſubjects.

The weak reigns of the children of this monarch, and the ſtill more feeble reign of Philip de Valois, obſtructed thoſe improvements; they entirely vaniſhed under John, ſirnamed *the Good*. The troubles occaſioned through the misfortunes and imprudence of that prince, plunging the ſtate into confuſion again, produced two contrary effects; they deprived the monarch of all his authority, and the people of their right of fixing the ſubſidies. The wiſdom of Charles V, revived the deſigns of Philip *Auguſt*, St. Lewis, and Philip *the Fair*. Charles, with the aſſiſtance of more enlightened and happier times, advanced ſtill farther than

thoſe wiſe princes, and that great man, by a combination of the moſt juſt and extenſive views, eſtabliſhed a monarchy that would be perfect, if the reſpectable huſbandman had not been ſtill ſhackled with unjuſt chains. Confuſion again prevailed under the weak Charles VI. Charles VII, reſumed the plan of his grandfather, and executed it as far as mediocrity of talents and continual war would permit him. Fortunate circumſtances uniting vaſt provinces to the crown, and conſpiring with the policy of Lewis XI, the monarchy was not only reſtored again, but even deſpotiſm itſelf began to raiſe its head. The ſeverity, however, of arbitrary power which that prince exerciſed, was felt only by the ſmall portion of the ſtate that was neareſt the throne. The people were governed with juſtice, and if the nobles might juſtly complain that Lewis had annihilated their privileges, the great body of the nation had a right to bleſs the hand that deſtroyed the yoke which thoſe ſubaltern tyrants made ſo heavy. In a word, *Lewis* XI, *was a ſevere man who did much good*; to him the ſtate owed her tranquility, the throne its authority, and the people that protection of the laws which placed them out of the reach of oppreſſion. It was not, doubtleſs, from a love for his ſubjects that he effected thoſe happy alterations. He had a ſoul incapable of ſuch an exalted ſentiment; but the liberty of the enſlaved coinciding with his intereſt, he made others happy for his own ſake.

In England, the revolutions of government were not leſs, but the gradation was quite different.

rent. The general aſſemblies which had been powerful in the preceding reigns, ſeemed to have loſt ground under Edward I.

FIRST HOUSE OF COMMONS IN ENGLAND UNDER EDWARD I.

This prince was in hopes of leſſening the ſtrength of that great body, by calling in the deputies of the people to aſſiſt at them. He ſucceeded, in fact, ſo far as to counterbalance the lords, and ruled with leſs oppoſition. But under his ſon Edward, the new members were become more formidable than the ancient. The houſe of commons already began to eſtabliſh their authority on a ſolid foundation, and the parliament, by their reſolution, was made more powerful then ever. They now, for the firſt time, formally tried their ſovereign, forced him to abdicate his dignity, and preſcribed the form of adminiſtration which the regents were to follow. The continual wars of Edward III, prevented that monarch from attending to the increaſe of power which that great body acquired. Beſides the whole nation, flattered by the ſplendor enjoyed under that hero, refuſed nothing to a prince whoſe triumphs equalled the number of his years.

But under the grandſon of this great man, the parliament ſeeing the weakneſs of the monarch, and the condition of the ſtate, ſtruck the moſt deciſive blow, by depoſing Richard II, as they had depoſed his grandfather, but with more ſolemnity, more regular preparations, and ſupporting their bold proceedings with the moſt ſpecious motives. They

conferred the ſceptre of their own authority on Lancaſter, with certain conditions that made it dependent on the laws. When the quarrels broke out between the two Roſes, and convulſed the iſland, the people, in order to turn their misfortunes to advantage, crowned the princes of the two rival families alternately: but each time they raiſed a new monarch to the throne, they obliged him to give up ſome part of his prerogative. Thus, in the very boſom of diſſenſions and civil wars, which are generally deſtructive to liberty, the Engliſh produced theirs, and the blood they ſhed in the conteſt of their kings, was made beneficial to the independence of the people.

CASIMIR proceeded in Poland as Edward had done in England, and Philip *the Fair* in France. He called the gentry to the general diets, where, till then, the nobility alone appeared. But that abuſe which afterwards crept in and remained, of exacting the ſuffrage of every individual, in order to form a decree, filled thoſe aſſemblies with riot and confuſion, and ſtill occaſions misfortunes to that kingdom. Nothing can diſplay the character of each of thoſe nations, better than ſuch contrary effects produced from ſimilar cauſes. The admiſſion of the third order of the ſtate, augments the authority of the prince in France, in England it raiſes the power of the people, and produces anarchy and confuſion in Poland.

SPAIN exhibited every ſpecies of government. In Arragon, the king, for a long time, was no more than the firſt magiſtrate, to execute the decrees of the people, without having it in his power

to

to interrupt them wantonly. The grand juſticiary, who reſembled the ephori of the Lacedemonians, kept a watchful eye over the proceedings of the monarch and the execution of the laws. This formidable magiſtrate was a check to the authority of the prince, and ſometimes annulled his orders, and even went ſo far as to cite him before the tribunal of the nation. Caſtile remained a long time, without any determinate form of government. The continual oppoſition of the courts of juſtice to the monarch was troubleſome to him, and uſeleſs to the people, ſerving only to foment ſeditions. The capacity of Ferdinand triumphed at laſt in both kingdoms, over the obſtacles raiſed againſt his predeceſſors, and under that prince, Spain became a real monarchy.

VENICE exhibits a remarkable change. We have ſeen her adminiſtration that was democratic, in its origin, tend gradually to an ariſtocracy. In the beginning of the fourteenth century, this ariſtocracy was ſtill moderate. All the citizens were admitted to offices and places of truſt; they took cognizance of important affairs, and it was neceſſary for the ſtate to be confirmed by their ſuffrages. The doge Gradenigo, aſſiſted by circumſtances favourable to his deſigns, had a law paſſed, admitting only a certain number of the moſt illuſtrious families to the ſupreme council. Thoſe families became the only truſtees of the adminiſtration; the reſt, being excluded from this valuable privilege, were ranged in the claſs of ſubjects. The ſovereignty thus paſſing into the hands of a ſmall number of powerful citizens, an

abſolute oligarchy was erected on the ruins of the commonwealth.

LEGISLATURE.

LEGISLATION continued to flouriſh in Caſtile, the promiſe, no leſs pernicious than extravagant, which the vaſſals made of being faithful to their lords, even againſt the king himſelf, was erazed from the oath of fidelity. It was decreed in Arragon, that no city ſhould be expoſed to the torture before condemnation; a moſt wiſe decree againſt a barbarous cuſtom, which ſeemed to have been invented for no other end but to oblige innocence to excuſe the injuſtice to which ſhe was made a victim.

IN Portugal, Dennis forbid the clergy to carry any money to Rome, or purchaſe lands. This double precaution prevented the ſap which cheriſhed and ſtrengthened the ſtate from circulating abroad; and preſerving eſtates in families, ſecured to them the means of being uſeful. In Bohemia, John ordered all ſales, purchaſes, and contracts, made between individuals, to be publickly entered in the records, a law that prevented the avidity of chicanery and litigation, and which ſhould be in force in every country. In England Edward III, ſenſible that laws which were intended to regulate the fortune and tranquility of the people, could not be expreſſed in terms too clear, baniſhed the French language from the courts of juſtice, where it had reigned from the time of William the conqueror, ordering the judges to make uſe of the vulgar tongue. In France, the wiſeſt laws entirely changed the face of the nation.

The

The minority of kings was abridged, that ſource of domeſtic quarrels cut off, the crown lands were inalienable, and their patrimony thus ſecured, furniſhed princes with the means of ſupporting the dignity of ſupporting their rank. An order was made that all decrees and judgments given in the courts of juſtice, ſhould be kept on record; by this means juriſprudence was ſettled, judges had a permanent guide, lawyers were furniſhed with invariable principles, and the citizen was ſupplied with certain determinate rules for his conduct. In a work of this nature, we do not admit of a particular detail of all the admirable regulations made during the reigns of the Valois. The number of them was very great, and they were the baſis of that code thet was formed in a more enlightened age. This gradation of knowlege was owing to the eſtabliſhment of parliaments by Philip *the Fair*, which are ſtill on the ſame footing.

Those bodies being made perpetual, devoted themſelves without interruption to the great work of legiſlation alone. Illuſtrious magiſtrates roſe up amongſt them, who, animated by a glorious emulation, directed all their views to what might augment the felicity and harmony of their fellow citizens. They inſpired the princes with a reliſh for thoſe ideas which they had acquired by a diligent ſtudy, and by this uſe of their talents became inſtruments of the monarch's glory, and the happineſs of the ſubject.

MANNERS.

It is a difficult matter to give a clear idea of the manners that prevailed during the courſe of this æra. The people grown ſtupid and brutal un-

der the yoke, had all the vices of ſlaves. Poiſon was never more common, never were inſurrections more terrible. The Levellers in England, the Lollards in Germany, the Jacquerie in France, factions intirely compoſed of peaſants, committed the moſt horrid exceſſes. Thoſe men, who from being treated like wild beaſts by their inhuman maſters, became ſo many fierce lions, who deſtroyed every thing they found in their way. The general diſpoſition of the nobles, on the contrary, was a mixture of gallantry and candour, of courage and devotion. We may trace thoſe diſpoſitions in the orders of knighthood which then appeared. All were devoted at the ſame time to love, to ſome ſaint, and to arms. Duels were frequent. We ſcarce meet with any kings or princes who were famous within thoſe two centuries, but what ſent mutual challenges to each other, in the face of all Europe. The nobles followed this example, and generally for the honour of ſome lady. But before they engaged, they devoted themſelves to ſome patron ſaint, and prayed of heaven to grant them the grace to deſtroy their enemy.

No age ever ſhewed a greater number of military heroines. Jane d'Arc, Jane of Blois, Margaret of Anjou, Mary de Molina, Iſabella of Lorrain, marched at the head of armies, ſhared in the battles and often decided the day.

GENERAL DISPOSITION.

PHILOSOPHY was far from making any conſiderable progreſs. The moſt illuſtrious and exalted perſonages, men of the firſt eminence in learning, and whole bodies celebrated for their know-

lege

lege, gave credit to preſages, magic and judicial aſtrology.

The great Edward, whom no motives or ſolicitations could perſuade to pacific meaſures, ſuddenly altered his reſolution on the appearance of a ſtorm, looking upon it as a menace from heaven. The council of Charles VI, at the very moment they were going to lay on a ſevere and unjuſt tax, were diverted from proceeding by a hurricane. Philip *the Long*, ſent to conſult a Flandrican woman that was ſaid to be gifted with the ſpirit of prophecy, to know whether his conſort had been faithful to his bed, and whether the prince ſhe had brought him was really his ſon: her anſwer made the king perfectly eaſy. A biſhop of Sylva, celebrated for his learning, declared in a ſerious manner, that certain nuns were grown ſo very familiar with the devils, that they converſed with them without any dread or horror. The parliament of Paris attributed the fate of Enguerrand de Mariguy to the witchcraft of his wife and daughter, who were condemned and burned according to their ſentence.

John XXII, the moſt intelligent pope who had reſided at Avignon, having diſcovered a plot formed againſt his life, requeſted the counteſs of Foix to lend him the horn of a ſerpent, which was ſaid to poſſeſs a charm againſt poiſon. This horn was in ſuch high eſteem, that the pope was obliged to depoſit a very conſiderable ſum, as a ſecurity for the reſtitution, and to pronounce anathemas againſt thoſe who ſhould attempt to retain it. This pontiff, in one of his letters, gave a long and ſerious account of the ſeveral enchant-

ments

ments practiſed in his times. The human mind has been in all ages the ſport of thoſe illuſions and terrors: with antiquity they were only ridiculous, but in modern hiſtory they appear in a horrible light, where we ſee millions of unfortunate victims committed to the flames on account of thoſe follies.

NAVIGATION AND GEOGRAPHY.

NAVIGATION made continual advances, for which the world was indebted to the reſolution of the Portugueze. Before the middle of the fifteenth century, Europeans ſailed no farther than the Mediterranean and the Baltic ſeas. The Eaſtern ocean was known only by name. The Atlantic was frequented only on the immediate borders of our coaſts. People were far from ſuſpecting another hemiſphere. No one thought even of approaching to the equator. The compaſs had been diſcovered, but wretched prejudices, which the revival of ſcience could not remove, reſtrained mariners from making uſe of it to the weſt or ſouth. On the weſt they imagined there was a boundleſs ſea, or a planiſphere, the extremity of which was terminated by an infinite precipice. On the ſouth, they fancied that there was a continual aſcent to the line, and that beyond this the rotundity of the earth formed a deſcent to the oppoſite pole, down which veſſels muſt be hurried into a dreadful abyſs. People looked upon the torrid zone as uninhabitable, the

ſeas

ſeas there either dried up, or boiling with the ardour of the ſun, and the air ſo much inflamed as to conſume men and all other creatures.

A CAPE near the coaſt of Guinea was conſidered as a boundary placed by nature, beyond which it was not permitted to venture; and this notion gave it the name of Cape Non. We have ſeen the infant Henry ſoaring above thoſe prejudices, and attempting to make his countrymen deſpiſe them. There is a pleaſure in conſidering how artfully that illuſtrious prince attacked the opinions that obſtructed his deſign, with what ſkill and dexterity he employed reaſon againſt the terrors of ignorance, how he worked upon vanity by commendations, and avarice by promiſes. Having ſo far prevailed as to perſuade them to make an attempt, he took no notice of the timidity of thoſe whom prejudice reſtrained from proceeding; he extolled to the ſkies the efforts of thoſe who had made ſome progreſs, and rewarded, with profuſion, the moſt trifling diſcoveries. By this means he encouraged a whole nation of mariners, to whom he became a father. By patience and labour he made known to Europe the iſland of Madeira, thoſe of Cape-Verd, and the coaſt of Guinea. The riches produced by thoſe diſcoveries, inflamed all the Portugueze; they ſailed along the coaſt of Afric, and viſited that immenſe continent which extends from the coaſt of Gibraltar to the farther ſide of Zair. Encouraged by thoſe rapid ſucceſſes, they conceived the deſign of opening themſelves a paſſage, through the African into the eaſtern Ocean. They were in hopes

hopes of reaching as far as Judia, and by carrying on an immediate trade with that country, cut off the ſources of the power of Venice. They were near accompliſhing it at the cloſe of this æra, and they had but one ſtep to make in order to double the cape, beyond which they ſhould find the hemiſphere they deſired.

THE progreſs of navigation gave riſe to a new branch of commerce. The products of Afric introduced another ſpecies of merchandize; and Liſbon became, in her turn, one of the richeſt magazines in the univerſe. The Venetians, the Genoeſe, and the people of France, continued their commerce in the Levant, and the Hanſe cities in the northern ſeas. England began to build ſhips, and her wool was already a conſiderable object of exportation. In the violent ſtruggles between England and France, the people of the Netherlands always declared for the former, from an apprehenſion that power might refuſe wool neceſſary for their manufactures.

INDUSTRY was alive throughout the Weſt; it triumphed in Flanders; manufactures of cloth, camblets and tapiſtry, flouriſhed at Ghent, Bruges and Antwerp, where all Europe went in queſt of them. It was trade raiſed thoſe cities to ſo powerful a condition, and enabled the dukes of Burgundy to diſplay a taſte and magnificence in their courts, ſuperior to the reſt of the world.

UNIVERSITIES daily multiplied, and acquired greater reputation. Oxford was famous for divinity; Bologna was diſtinguiſhed for law; Montpellier

pellier was already conſidered as the firſt ſchool for phyſic, and her univerſity revered as the parent of all the reſt. She reckoned no leſs than twenty thouſand ſtudents, and enjoyed ſuch privileges as made her a kind of ſeparate and independent ſtate. The rector had the ſame honours paid to him as a prince of the blood royal, and the ſons of kings thought it an honour to poſſeſs that dignity. Their deputies had ſeats in the general aſſembly of the nation; were authoriſed to preſent remonſtrances to the throne, and their oppoſition was conſidered of the higheſt conſequence. Upon the court having attempted to weaken ſome of the privileges of this body, the rector ordered the ſchools to be ſhut up. This order was on the point of exciting a moſt dangerous inſurrection, to prevent which the court was obliged to recede.

DIVINITY.

The moſt diſtinguiſhed faculty was that of the divines. The utility of their labours, however, was far from keeping pace with the honours that were heaped upon them. The moſt obſcure queſtions frequently engroſſed the ſtudy and attention of the moſt grave doctors. Half a century was entirely ſpent in diſputes relative to the conception of the Virgin Mary. The Scotiſts who maintained this mother of God exempt from original ſin, and the Dominicans who believed ſhe had contracted that ſtain, engaged the attention of almoſt every aſſembly: one of the two parties was near purſuing the other with fire and ſword. Another queſtion was, whether the blood which flowed

flowed from the ſide of Chriſt at the time of his paſſion, remained united to his divinity. The doctrine of the beautific viſion, which made ſo much noiſe in the firſt ages of the church, was likewiſe debated. The queſtion was, whether the ſouls of the righteous enjoyed the ſight of God immediately after death, or were to wait for that happineſs until the laſt judgment. John XXII, warmly defended the opinion that deferred the happineſs of the ſaint; he endeavoured even to make a ſchool queſtion of it. The univerſity of Paris ſtrongly oppoſed this error, and a ſcandalous diſpute aroſe between her and the pontiff. Philip de Valois took part in the affair, and looked upon thoſe who followed the opinion of the pope, as heretics who deſerved the flames.

We muſt, however, confeſs, that in the begining of the fifteenth century, there appeared, even among the faculty of divinity, ſome men of excellent minds, who devoted themſelves to ſolid and uſeful ſtudies. Such were John Gerſon, the cardinal D'Ailly, Nicholas de Clemengis, and William Chartier. Thoſe four men made deep reſearches into the eccleſiaſtical hiſtory, the only ſource whence pure divinity is to be drawn. The two firſt aſtoniſhed the fathers of the council of Conſtantia, by the learning they diſplayed in that famous aſſembly. The horrid doctrine of regicides that had prevailed in the church, and diſturbed ſtates for ſo many ages, was condemned by their care and influence: it was likewiſe by conforming to their views that the fathers of Bale afterwards made ſuch uſeful decrees.

JURIS-

JURISPRUDENCE.

JURISPRUDENCE maintained its ground. Bartholi, Durand, and Francis Aretin, in Italy; Lyttleton and Horne, in England; Cugnieres and Raoul de Preſle in France, became famous by their bours, and devoted them to the elucidation of queſtions really important. The moſt famous in thoſe days, and that which employed the attention of the greateſt men, was relative to the ſeparation of the two powers, and the limits proper to both. Profeſſors of canon laws, blinded by prejudice or ſeduced by intereſt, in vain endeavoured to protect and ſupport a phantom that had been long worſhiped: men reſpectable for their learning and knowlege, by the irreſiſtible lights of authority, reaſon and hiſtory.

PHYSIC AND CHYMISTRY.

THIS age ſo luminous on account of many other branches of knowlege, was the moſt obſcure with regard to phyſic. That ſcience was entirely fallen to decay during the courſe of this æra, and it was towards the latter end only that the Italian Leonicinus gave ſome hopes of its recovery. Chemiſtry was better ſupported. Raymond Lulli, and Nicholas Flamel, became famous in that ſcience. But the writings of the former abound with unmeaning ſtuff, and ſtupid ſophiſtry that ſhew nothing but the abuſe of the ſcience. It is ſuſpected that the efforts of the latter in purſuit of the philoſopher's ſtone, were meant only as a veil

to

to conceal from the public eye, the method by which he had enriched himſelf.

NATURAL PHILOSOPHY.

REAL natural philoſophy was ſtill entirely unknown. Muller, the German, emitted ſome ſparks of aſtronomy. He tranſlated into Latin the Almageſtes of Ptolemy, the only book which furniſhed any notion of that ſcience. The true reſtorer was juſt born, and belonged to a more brilliant age.

MILITARY ART.

THE military art began to be reduced to principles. Europe was indebted to Charles *the Raſh* for this revolution. The duke of Burgundy inſpired by the peruſal of the ancients, had reflected on the arrangements of the Greeks and Romans. He felt the utility of intrenching a camp, forming columns, having ſeparate wings, ſupporting thoſe with cavalry, properly diſpoſed on the flanks, of having a main body, and providing another of reſerve; in a word, of introducing the reſources of genius into the art of deſtroying mankind. Lewis XI, the perpetual enemy of that prince, found it neceſſary to copy his example, and taught the art to France, in which ſhe afterwards gave leſſons to all Europe.

IT is eaſy to conceive that a period, when the ſpirit of philoſophy was ſo little known, was not formed to produce real hiſtorians. We ſcarce find any who were not addicted to the marvellous. Some, however, began to appear, who otherwiſe poſſeſſed eſtimable qualities. Among the chronologiſts

gift of this century are to be noticed. Matthew of Weſtminſter, who wrote a tolerable chronology, from the beginning of the world to the fourteenth century. Walſingham, a monk of St Albans, who has left us an uſeful hiſtory of the reign of Henry VI, and the factions of the *two Roſes*. The German Evrard, to whom we are indebted for the annals of the dukes of Auſtria, a work uſeful in throwing light on the antiquities of tha t part of Germany.

PETER DUYSBOURG, a teutonic knight, has tranſmitted the hiſtory of his order; it is no leſs curious on account of the matter, than barbarous with reſpect to the ſtyle. France produced writers in this walk worthy of notice. The Flandrican Froiſſard, may be conſulted with advantage in regard to the events of the fourteenth century, eſpecially thoſe relating to France and England. Monſtrelet, his countryman, continued the work and eclipſed his model. In the chronicle of the latter, we find impartiality, boldneſs and a ſpirit of criticiſm, very little known to the age he lived in; he is the beſt guide for the reigns of Charles VI and VII. Theſe of Lewis VI and Charles VIII, have been ſtill better painted by Philip de Comines, whoſe work, notwithſtanding the obſolete ſtyle in which it is written, is read with infinite pleaſure. The Florentine, Villani, ſhewed Italy the characters of true hiſtory: he poſſeſſed, in an eminent degree, the moſteſſential requiſite, that is a love for truth; to this he adhered on almoſt every occaſion, with an inflexibility, that neither the fac-

tions, in the midſt of which he had lived, nor the deareſt intereſts could ſhake.

Platina, the Mantuan, ſo famous for his knowlege and the misfortunes it drew upon him, publiſhed the lives of the popes, a work that would have been complete, if the prejudices of his times, the dread of the pontiffs, under whoſe immediate eyes he wrote, and the protection they granted him, had permitted him always to ſpeak his ſentiments. Greece produced real hiſtorians; Pachimer, has made himſelf famous by the hiſtory of Michael Paleologue, and of his ſucceſſor Andronic: the conſiderable employments he held at the court of thoſe two princes, gave him a full opportunity to know their characters, and diſcover the moſt ſecret ſprings of the principal events of their reign. John Cantacuzenes, ſo juſtly odious to poſterity, for having uſurped the purple from the ſon of his benefactor, was a great emperor while he governed, and a good writer when he no longer reigned; he was fortunate enough to fall from the throne, without ſtaining it with his blood, ſought ſafety in retirement, and found comfort in his misfortunes, by painting the revolutions which his ambition had partly occaſioned. We are indebted to Chalchondile for excellent annals of the Turks; we muſt not always, however, give implicit credit to that author. The Greeks cannot be read with too much caution, whenever they treat of thoſe victorious people who ſubdued them. Leonard Juſtinian has left us, in a well written epiſtle, a curious narrative of the taking of Conſtantinople. The work of Hayton, the Armenian,

who

who has tranſmitted to us the exploits of the Tartars, ſhould be peruſed by thoſe who wiſh to know that nation of conquerors.

BELLES LETTRES.

THE belles lettres took a ſublime flight, and flouriſhed from the misfortunes of Conſtantinople. We muſt not, however, date their revival from the taking of that city, but go back to another century. The victories of Amurat II, and the great Bajazet, the confuſion which they occaſioned in the empire, and the repeated diſtreſſes of the Greeks, were the origin of thoſe emigrations ſo happy for Europe. The philoſophers who cultivated learning, terrified by the continual ſtorms which the ambition of princes, the enthuſiaſm of the clergy, and the progreſs of the Ottomans raiſed in their country, fled to Italy in ſearch of a happier retreat, where they might quietly devote themſelves to the enjoyments of ſtudy. Thoſe ſtrangers, who found it neceſſary to merit eſteem, by making themſelves uſeful, opened ſchools where they taught the Greek and Latin languages; they explained all the riches of thoſe idioms, and made their pupils converſant with the beauties of the great writers of ancient Rome and Athens. Italy crowded with joy to hear thoſe Greeks, a noble emulation was kindled, and taſte revived at the view of great models. Numbers imitated, and wrote with purity and elegance, the languages of Demoſthenes and Cicero. The moſt celebrated among thoſe fugitives, and the true reſtorers of learning were Chiſoloras, who

firſt made known the arts of Greece in Italy, and enlightened the council of Conſtantia; Theodore Gara, a native of Theſſalonica, tranſlated into Latin the hiſtory of animals by Ariſtotle, and the aphoriſms of Hyppocrates: George of Trebiſond, ſecretary to Nicholas V, was the principal cauſe of the protection which learning met with from that pontiff; Demetrius Chalchondile, compoſed the firſt Greek grammar; and taught with extraordinary ſucceſs in many cities of Italy. Beſſarion accompanied John Paleologue to the council of Florence, where he diſtinguiſhed himſelf by his eloquence; he was created a cardinal by Eugene, ſettled at Rome, and became the friend, the protector and father of all the learned; his houſe was continually open to cheriſh and honour them; in fine, Conſtantine Laſcaris thought it no diſhonour to the imperial blood that flowed in his veins, to give leſſons in Meſſina; this ſerved only to increaſe the reſpect of that city for this eminent man; the greateſt honours were paid him during his life, and a ſuperb monument erected to his memory after his deceaſe.

The Italians who diſtinguiſhed themſelves in the learned languages, were very numerous: we ſhall confine ourſelves to the moſt illuſtrious. Poggi, born near Florence, was ſecretary to ſeveral pontiffs, and employed in that capacity in the councils. We are indebted to him for the recovery of the works of Quintilian, the hiſtory of Amienus-Marcellinus, and of ſome treatiſes written by Cicero: thoſe works that had been

a long

a long time loſt to the world, he diſcovered in an old tower belonging to the monaſtery of St. Gal. He has left us a hiſtory of Florence, a narrative of the death of Jerome of Prague, ſome licentious tales, with a few orations and tranſlations. The moſt of his works are admired for the purity of the Latin, the ſtrength of the thoughts, and an eloquence that ſometimes reaches to the ſublime. Laurence Valla, of Placentia, diſtinguiſhed himſelf by his criticiſms, which contributed much towards forming the taſte of Rome. His talent for ſatyr raiſed many enemies againſt him among the clergy. But the court of Naples, where he found great favour and protection, diſappointed the decrees of the inquiſition, and preſerved him from the flames to which he had been condemned, on account of ſome raillery againſt the monks. His principal work is that of the beauties of the Latin tongue, which envy unjuſtly accuſed him with having ſtolen. His treatiſes againſt the falſe donation of Conſtantine, a bold attempt for the time and place he lived in, is ſtill admired.

Francis Philelphus, the worthy ſon-in-law of Chriſoloras, was the beſt grammarian, and one of the ableſt men of the age in the buſineſs of negociation. Marſillus Ficin, firſt made known Plato and the diſciples of that great philoſopher, by the excellent tranſlations he gave of thoſe authors. Nicholas Perot, by tranſlating the five books of the hiſtory of Polybius, revived thoſe precious remnants of the forty, that had been written by that excellent hiſtorian. Pic de Mi-

randole, added new luſtre to the ſplendor of his birth and his dignity as a ſovereign, by the glory of being one of the moſt learned men of the age. Palmerino, whom envy and ſuperſtition doomed to the ſtake, for ſome fooliſh diſputes of the ſchools. Ange-Peletian, uniting the moſt extenſive erudition with all the beauties of literature, diſtinguiſhed himſelf in poetry, eloquence and hiſtory.

ITALY did not confine herſelf to the cultivation of the learned languages; ſhe endeavoured at the ſame time to poliſh her own idiom. Men of excellent parts ſoon brought it to perfection. Alighieri Dante, formed by the peruſal of the ancients, endeavoured to give it all the force and ſpirit of thoſe ſublime models; he ſucceeded, and his poem on hell, which abounds with the moſt dreadful beauties, is ſtill admired by the Italians. Francis Petrarch purſued a new courſe; he endeavoured to make his language the organ of ſentiment and tender paſſion. His poems to the beautiful Laura, which determined the idiom, muſt delight every reader who knows the value of true delicacy; he had great wit, and was born to be the rival of Anacreon, if the taſte of the age had not diſfigured his verſes with a ridiculous mixture of love and devotion. His beſt pieces are not entirely exempt from this defect: we meet with it even in his admired odes of *the eyes*, called The Graces, on account of their eaſe and delicacy. In fine, the Florentine Bocace, pupil of Petrarch, wrote in proſe as his maſter had done in verſe, and the Italian language can produce nothing more finiſhed

niſhed than his tales. France applauded, and endeavoured to catch the glorious fire that blazed in Italy. Gilles Colonne, kindled the emulation of the French, by forming the mind of Philip *the Fair*, and inſpiring him with a taſtefor the arts.

Among the French who diſtinguiſhed themſelves in this particular, was Clopinel, famous for his continuation of the romance of the Roſe, and for an eſteemed tranſlation of the Conſolation of Boetius. John le Maire, diſplayed imagination in pieces of poetry that were then admired. Francis Vellon, by his baſe morals, diſhonoured talents that were otherwiſe eſtimable. An illuſtrious princeſs honoured Alain Chartier with a kiſs, that ſhe might be able to boaſt ſhe had kiſſed the moſt eloquent lips in France. We muſt not, however, conceive a high idea of this eloquence. The ſermons of Maillard and Barlet, fragments of which are ſtill remaining, are ſtuffed with the moſt indelicate and aukward jeſts, and which were conſidered as maſter-pieces, ſufficiently ſhew the ſtyle and taſte that then prevailed. Eloquence, the moſt ſublime of all arts, is ever the laſt that attains perfection, becauſe it is a gift, which requires, in the higheſt degree, the united powers of genius, taſte and knowlege.

While endeavours were uſed to remove the ruſt that covered the reigning language, the ſouth of France perſevered in improving the provincial dialect. Toulouſe was the center of the wits, who enriched it; and the Weſt was indebted to this city for a new mode of encouraging talents. Seven of the principal inhabitants agreed

the ſurprizing effects of their ingenious pieces, which at preſent deſcribe the paſſions of the heart, or trace the errors of the human mind, and ſo powerfully and agreeably agitate our ſouls, blending ſolid inſtructions with the moſt affecting pleaſures. Tragedies were then nothing but repreſentations of the delivery of the Virgin Mary, of the birth, life, or paſſion of Chriſt; and in a word, of all the myſteries of religion. In thoſe entertainments, ridiculous ſituations, low expreſſions, and indecent images, generally profaned the ſanctity of the ſubject. Comedies were nothing only ſtupid buffoonery, or cutting ſatyres, deſtitute of common ſenſe, decency and regularity. Thoſe aukward compoſitions played with the greateſt magnificence, were applauded with raptures by a people who ventured, two centuries after, to criticiſe maſter-pieces, that would have excited the envy of a Sophocles or a Menander.

FINE ARTS.

PAINTING, ſculpture and architecture, had appeared only in Italy, but they began to diſplay all their ſplendor there. Cimabue, being inſtructed by the Grecian painters, whom the ſenate of Florence had called in, ſtole from them the ſecret of their art. Painting, by his talents, quickly roſe from its infant ſtate to perfect maturity. He aſtoniſhed his maſters whom he equalled, and if the pieces we have remaining of his, are no longer conſidered as maſter-pieces, tis becauſe he has been followed by thoſe wonderful artiſts whom a Zeuxis or an Apelles would have dreaded as

as rivals. He founded the Florence ſchool, the moſt ancient in the Weſt; it was famous from its birth, and produced many illuſtrious pupils. Hence came Giotto, Organia, Veroquio, Perugin, and above all, Leonard de Vinci; who, to the glory of their works, have added that of forming the greateſt maſters. Anthony of Meſſina, the firſt Italian who painted in oil, and Bellin, who ſtole the ſecret from him, in order to communicate it generouſly to his rivals, laid the foundation of the Venetian ſchool, while Vandyke did the ſame honour to Flanders, his native country. Sculpture, which always follows the progreſs of painting, revived at the ſame time, on the banks of the Arno and Tyber. Tada, Pizani and Donato, dug up thoſe antiquities that had lain buried for ſo many ages under the ruins of the Roman cities; they learned to ſeek real beauties, by adhering ſtrictly to nature. They ſtudied regularity of deſign, juſt ſymetry and proportion, delicacy in the contours, and ſoftneſs in the drapery: by ſketches frequently repeated with ſucceſs, they, at length, ſo happily caught the ſtyle and manner of their models, that the eye might miſtake their copies for originals. Architecture was recovered by the ſame efforts. Men, at length, opened their eyes to examine the remains of thoſe majeſtic ſtructures erected to Jupiter and Minerva. They ſaw the merit of thoſe orders invented by the Greeks, and ſo happily imitated by the Romans. Superb columns were raiſed, in which boldneſs and proportion were united. Temples were conſecrated to the divinity, and cities admired the taſte

and

and magnificence that appeared in the public monuments. Nicholas of Piza, decorated Florence with thoſe famous quays on the banks of the river, and adorned them with ſtatues of the benefactors of mankind. Calendario, drew the plan of the ſquare of St. Mark, and ſurrounded it with thoſe magnificent piazzas that make its beauty unrivalled.

EVERY thing conſpired to the glory of arts and ſciences: the people, who had neglected them, the princes who had deſpiſed them, and the popes who had deteſted them, extolled their wonderous beauties, animated them by their praiſes, encouraged them by their favour, and ſupported them with their power. The great Coſmo, the moſt reſpectable man of the age; Julian de Medicis, the oracle of the princes of his times; Nicholas V, Eugene IV, and Sixtus IV, the moſt venerable popes of thoſe days; Robert of Naples, who was eſteemed the moſt excellent monarch of his age; Alphonſus the magnanimous, whoſe reign was called the golden age; Charles V, ſo famous for his wiſdom; all thoſe ſovereigns who diſtinguiſhed themſelves in this century, conſidered it as a duty, and an eſſential part of their adminiſtration to favour genius. They were perſuaded that byincreaſing the knowlege of their ſubjects, they ſhould contribute to their happineſs, and ſecure the tranquility of the throne. And, in fact, the arts never excited enmity but in little and unworthy ſouls, who either have no ſenſe of the merit of thinking, or who, being afraid to meet the

looks

looks of poſterity, dread thoſe talents which produce them before that impartial tribunal.

While the moſt flouriſhing nations emulouſly wrought wonders to reſtore the fine arts; a few men, by the moſt aſtoniſhing diſcoveries, ſecured their reign for ever.

The compaſs was diſcovered at the cloſe of the thirteenth century. The name of the author of ſo beneficial a diſcovery is loſt. Some pretend that the dominicans ſent among the Tartars, brought back this invention with them to Europe; others will have it that Marius Paulo, the celebrated traveller, found this wonderful machine in China, which, in fact, had been known there a long time. The greateſt number are of opinion that we had it from Flavio, an inhabitant of Melfi, in the kingdom of Naples. It is probable that it was due to the Neapolitan, who being then in ſubjection to the family of Anjou, had placed a flower de luce at the head of the needle. Every body muſt be ſenſible of the advantages which reſulted to geography and navigation from this diſcovery. People were no longer afraid of wandering out of their courſe, clouds and darkneſs might now in vain conceal the ſtars, which till then had been the only guide. The mariner in this had an unerring rule to direct his way. He might ſail with ſafety to the moſt diſtant ſeas of the ocean, and the moſt remote regions of the world.

PRINTING, about 1450.

Printing is of a later date, and was invented about the middle of the fifteenth century. The inventors

inventors are little better known. The Chineſe alſo claim the honour of having communicated this diſcovery to us. They had, indeed, a form of printing; but very far from the perfection of ours. 'Twas a ſort of engraving, which conſiſted in tracing on a plate immoveable characters, that could ſerve only for one particular work; but they were ſtrangers to the admirable art of employing a ſmall number of letters, ſuſceptible of numberleſs combinations, which helped to compoſe an infinite number of different works, with ſo much facility and expedition. Holland boaſts of having communicated this invention to the world. Germany diſputes the honour with her. It appears to be due to Guttemberg of Straſbourg, and to John Fauſt of Mayence, who firſt conceived the idea, and particularly to their ſervant Peter Schæper, who firſt imagined the mobility of the letters, and the proper ink for printing. 'Twas this art, which by facilitating the multiplicity of copies, made inſtruction more eaſy and certain, and fixed the progreſs and duration of all the ſciences.

Till now there had been no paintings but in freſco and water colours. The water uſed by painters, blended the colours badly, and deadened their luſtre. Time, moreover, quickly effaced the works of the greateſt maſters, and totally deſtroyed them in a few years. John of Bruges, about the middle of the fifteenth century, firſt diſcovered the art of painting in oil. A more perfect harmony of colours, a more ſpirited and natural beauty in his pieces, filled the ſpectators with admiration and pleaſure.

Anthony,

Anthony, of Meſſina, ſtole his ſecret and carried it into Italy, whence it ſpread through the reſt of Europe. Painting acquired a new exiſtence, and the maſter-pieces of great artiſts, where thereby, in ſome ſort, impreſt with the ſeals of immortality.

At the ſame time, Marſo Finiguera, a ſilverſmith of Florence, found out an art unknown to all antiquity. This artiſt, while he was engraving on metals, obſerved, that the ſulphur he made uſe of in his operations, took the impreſſions of the figures in black or metzotinto. He communicated the reflections he made on this diſcovery to able draughtſmen. The latter immediately made experiments, and thence derived that ingenious art, which renews in our prints the beauties of painting. This ſort of impreſſion was as uſeful to pictures, as printing had been to books. It multiplied to an infinite degree the maſter-pieces of great artiſts, enabled men, at a trifling expence, to judge of the arrangement, deſign and execution; in a word, of every thing, except the colours.

We muſt add to thoſe diſcoveries, the revival of engraving on ſtone, an art that had been brought to great perfection by the ancients, but had been abſolutely loſt for more than ten centuries. The invention of ſpectacles, that ſo happily relieved the weakneſs of the moſt delicate and moſt precious of all our ſenſes: the eſtabliſhment of poſts, that commodiouſly convey our thoughts to abſent friends in the moſt diſtant parts: the uſe of bills of exchange, ſo well calculated for the

the eaſe and advantage of commerce, for which we are indebted to the ſufferings and oppreſſions of the Jews. As they were in a continal uncertainty with reſpect to their poſſeſſions and fortunes, and every moment under the apprehenſions of being deprived of them by their enemies and oppreſſors, they contrived this expedient to remove in a moment, without any difficulty, the moſt conſiderable riches, and place the fruits of their induſtry out of the reach of rapacious tyrants. In fine, like a ſtrong and vigorous ſoil, which produces ſome noxious weeds amidſt a great variety of ſalutary plants, this age gave birth to the invention of gunpowder. Berthold Schuart, a German cordelier, was the monk from whom Europe derived this deſtructive art, whoſe inevitable blows ſet aſide the merit of ſkill and dexterity, and have leſſened that of valour and courage.

SEVENTH EPOCHA.

CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS.

Revival of all the Sciences in the Weſt.

From the Year 1492 to 1648 of Chriſt.

STATE OF THE WORLD

EUROPE now began to acquire a more ſolid form. The laws had reſtored tranquility to the interior parts of her ſeveral ſtates; navigation and policy united them by the ties of commerce and

and intereſt. The manners of the people grew more refined, the fine arts improved, ſciences began to appear, and ſublime diſcoveries daily continued to embelliſh this beautiful part of the world.

ITALY was the centre of taſte and knowlege. Her cities were become the moſt magnificent, her inhabitants the moſt enlightened in the world, and her princes ſtrove with emulation to animate the progreſs of human underſtanding. The popes aſſiſted with all their power, and the moſt liberal rewards to promote the ſame laudable intention.

THE papacy, though deprived of many valuable privileges, was ſtill, however, the moſt reſpectable dignity in the Weſt. The late pontiffs had ſettled the reſtleſs ſpirit of the Roman people, and triumphed over the pretenſions which the emperors had upon Rome. That city was entirely ſubmiſſive to their authority, and the eccleſiaſtical territories then comprehended about a third part of what they now contain. Death had lately removed Innocent VIII, venerable for his age and virtues, from the throne, to make room for the Spaniard Borgia, who trampled under foot every law human and divine.

THE empire had loſt the north of Italy; but the dutchy of Milan and moſt of the neighbouring ſtates, ſtill acknowleged them as fiefs to that authority. It was divided into ſeven electorates, ſettled by the Golden Bull, beſides a number of eccleſiaſtical and ſecular principalities. The houſe

of Auſtria was the moſt powerful of this body. Frederic IV, the head of the family, with the imperial ſceptre, poſſeſſed alſo conſiderable territories, and Maximilian his ſon, who was appointed king of the Romans, had lately obtained the rich ſucceſſion of the dukes of Burgundy. To theſe extenſive poſſeſſions they added conſiderable claims, and ſtill greater expectations. So many advantages united, did not, as might be naturally expected, make thoſe princes formidable; the weak, the timid and indolent Frederic, devoting himſelf entirely to the ſtudy of the Belles Lettres and his own eaſe, had no reliſh but for the enjoyment of peace and tranquility. The active and imperious Maximilian, on the contrary, with all his ambition and love of glory, was vain, imprudent, extravagant, inconſtant, and as little calculated for the purſuit of great deſigns, as he was capable of forming them.

FRANCE extended from the channel to the Pyrenean mountains; ſhe had neither Alſace, Franche Comté, Lorrain, or Flanders: in other reſpects was little different from her preſent ſituation. This extenſive and populous kingdom was in peaceful ſubjection. The great fiefs had been lately united to the crown. The feudal government was nearly extinguiſhed; tribunals were erected and terrified oppreſſion; the right of fixing the taxes made the king all powerful; the troops were now paid out of his revenues, and obedient only to his orders. The nobles, who had been accuſtomed to perpetual wars, having

no

no longer any opportunity of exerciſing their valour at home, eagerly wiſhed for ſome foreign expeditions.

CHARLES VIII, who was ſeated on this reſpectable throne, was far from poſſeſſing the political talents of his father. He was affable, generous, brave, ambitious and an enemy to labour, ready to purſue the falſe ſplendor of any great enterprize, and to relinquiſh it upon the leaſt ſhadow of a diſappointment; with a paſſion for conqueſts, he had all the eſſential qualities to make them; but not a ſingle talent requiſite to preſerve them.

SPAIN, that had been divided for half a century, was now united under one authority. The Moors had loſt their laſt retreat; and Caſtile and Arragon, that had been ſo long ſeparated, now formed but one kingdom, by the marriage of the two ſovereigns. This power, ſo conſiderable before, was now much more ſo by the poſſeſſion of almoſt all the Mediterranean iſlands, and by the temper of the two chiefs. They both had ambition and capacity, and were perfect in the art, ſo eſſential in thoſe days, of covering their deſigns with the maſk of religion. Ferdinand was the greateſt politician of the age; Iſabella, a princeſs of the moſt exalted mind in Europe; he had more art and cunning, and was leſs delicate about the means of ſucceſs; Iſabella was more generous, more in love with true glory. They were both tenderly united, more, however, by the ties of eſteem than hymeneal bands. They had a well regulated treaſury, powerful fleets and numerous troops, trained up in the long conteſt

that preceded the expulſion of the Moors. Thoſe powers were the moſt conſiderable in the Weſt. They mutually counterbalanced and kept a jealous eye on each other. They had claims upon Italy which could not but prove fatal to that country.

The ſouth of Italy no longer enjoyed that happineſs, which the genius of Alphonſus *the Magnanimous* had procured it. This monarch had left Arragon and Italy to the legitimate princes of his family; but he had appointed as his ſucceſſor to the kingdom of Naples, his baſtard ſon Ferdinand I, who actually obtained the ſceptre; he was a weak and vicious man, deſpiſed by foreigners, who aſpired to his throne, and abhorred by his own people, who eagerly wiſhed for a revolution.

Under the ſpecious name of head of the republic, Peter de Medicis reigned like a tyrant in Florence; this prince was far from poſſeſſing the virtues and talents by which his anceſtors had raiſed their country to ſo flouriſhing a ſtate. Some illuſtrious families, who had been ever jealous of his, were ſecretly concerting a revolution, in order to reſtore liberty, and only waited for a favourable moment to ſhake off the yoke of an imperious maſter, whom they had not even the conſolation to reſpect.

On the north of the eccleſiaſtical ſtate, were the little ſovereignties of Faenza, Imola, Rimini, Bologna and Ravenna. Theſe had been uſurped from the ſee of Rome, in the abſence of the popes. The wiſe Hercules d'Eſt reigned over Modena

Modena and Ferrara; the valiant Francis de Gonzague, ſovereign of Mantua, diſtinguiſhed himſelf by his military talents; a branch of thoſe Paleologues who held the ſceptre of Conſtantinople, poſſeſſed the principality of Mount-Ferrat. The recent acquiſition of Piedmont and the ſituation of that province, gave the dukes of Savoy an influence which the policy of thoſe princes increaſed. Piſa was ſubject to the Florentines; Genoa was in ſlaviſh ſubjection to the ſovereigns of Milan, who under the title of protectors were abſolute maſters there.

THE acquiſition of Genoa, the uſurpation of Parma and Placentia, and the fertility of Lombardy, made the dutchy of Milan a conſiderable power. The princes of the houſe of Orleans, deſcendants of the lawful heireſs of the Vicontis, had urged in vain their unqueſtionable rights: Francis Sforca, the baſtard of a ſoldier of fortune, had ſtripped their anceſtors of thoſe fine poſſeſſions, and his poſterity held them. Young Galeas the weak ſucceſſor of thoſe celebrated adventurers whoſe valour had raiſed them to the rank of ſovereign, was now but the firſt ſlave of his uncle Ludovic, the moſt infamous and artful tyrant that ever exiſted.

VENICE was now in the full meridian of her glory, ſhe was in poſſeſſion of thoſe fertile provinces which extend from her gulph to the Adda. Dalmatia had loſt every idea of rebeling: the iſlands that command the Adriatic ſea were ſubject to her laws: ſhe had lately been deprived of the Morea and ſome iſlands of the Archipelago,

but ſtill poſſeſſed Candia the largeſt, and Cyprus the moſt fertile in thoſe ſeas. She had lately deſtroyed the republics that had been ſo long her rivals. Her commerce was the moſt conſiderable in the world, her policy made advantage of every motion of her neighbours, her troops were terrible to all the circumjacent ſtates, and her fleets ventured to face the Ottomans, who made the reſt of the world tremble.

THE Swiſs made ſome figure among the greater powers. Their cantons were lately united, and full of that glorious enthuſiaſm, which liberty, newly acquired, is apt to inſpire. Their numerous inhabitants were ſo many ſoldiers, whoſe courage was formidable to all Europe; the greateſt princes endeavoured to have them for defenders, and the north of Italy, of which they commanded the paſſes, looked upon this nation of warriors as maſters of her fortune.

ENGLAND, after being diſtracted and torn for a whole century, by the animoſity of the *Two Roſes*, now recovered under Henry VII, who united their ſeparate claims. This ſovereign, the firſt of the family of Tudor, after cruſhing the numberleſs factions that diſturbed the firſt years of his reign, began to enjoy a calm which he owed to his prudent and reſolute conduct. This tranquility enabled him to diſplay thoſe talents that gained him the firname of *the Engliſh Solomon*, and gave him leiſure to obſerve the motions of his neighbours. He was alarmed at the increaſing ſtrength of France, Spain, and the houſe of Auſtria, and already endeavoured to hold the balance between

between thoſe powers. His ſucceſſors have conſtantly purſued the ſame plan.

NAVARRE and Scotland, united to France, by inclination as well as intereſt, were influenced by that powerful kingdom in all their actions. John D' Albret, who was a native of France, ſaw with terror, that the ambitious king of Arragon was preparing to invade his territories: he had nothing but the protection of his former maſters to defend him againſt ſuch ſuperior forces. Scotland, too weak to reſiſt England, her ancient enemy, was obliged to ſhelter herſelf under the ſame power. She recovered under James VI, whoſe virtues obliterated the exceſſes of his father, as well as the misfortunes they had produced.

PORTUGAL thought of nothing but new diſcoveries. Her flouriſhing marine viſited every part of the African ſeas, founded powerful colonies, and ſubjected immenſe kingdoms to the yoke of their religion and ſovereign. John II, one of the greateſt monarchs of the age, taking no part in the frivolous and bloody diſputes of his neighbours, was the ſoul of all the labours of his ſubjects, and preſided over their welfare and happineſs.

THE three kingdoms of the North had been lately united under John of Oldembourg; but Sweden was continually ready to break from thoſe ties which ſhe had formed with indignant reluctance. Stephen Sture, though deprived of the office of adminiſtrator, ſtill preſerved a dangerous authority. Diſturbances continually aroſe, which the abilities of the monarch could not appeaſe, and were

were the preſages of a ſignal and approaching rupture.

The hand of Ladiſlas Jagellon, who was called in to govern Bohemia and Hungary, was too feeble either to repel the enemy that ravaged his frontiers, or to reſtrain the ſubjects who reluctantly obeyed a maſter whom they conſidered as unworthy to command them.

The government of Poland was the ſame as it is at preſent; ſhe elected her kings from the family of the Jagellons; ſhe now regretted the great Caſimir, and had lately crowned his ſon Albert, brother to Ladiſlas, who was more worthy of the ſupreme authority. She was continually at blows with the Turks who ravaged her plains, or with the Ruſſians who were become formidable ever ſince the great Bazilowitz had delivered them from ſlavery.

The power of the Turks had rapidly increaſed by their extraordinary valour, and extended from the Euphrates to the Sava, from the borders of the Euxine ſea to the mouth of the Nile. Numerous forces, inſpired by the enthuſiaſm of religion and glory, flew at the command of an abſolute ſultan, were at the ſame time, a terror to three parts of the world ,and found nothing to reſtrain their impetuoſity but the fleets of Venice, and the courage of thoſe knights who made Rhodes ſo illuſtrious. Bajazet II, who was ſeated on this formidable throne, was the firſt that degenerated from that long race of heroes we find in the poſterity of Ottoman. His brother Zizim, who was more worthy

worthy of ſo glorious a ſceptre, wandered about Europe, a ſlave to the chriſtian princes, the ſport of their caprice, or the phantom of their hopes.

PERSIA was ſubject to the Tartars. Egypt continued under the yoke of the Mamelucs, and the ſultan, who commanded them. The reſt of Africa was divided under ſeveral chriffs, and acknowleged the tyrant of Morocco for a chief, who, under the title of Miramolin, exhibited a faint ſhadow of the power of the califfs.

THIS was the ſtate of our hemiſphere at the beginning of the preſent epocha; the courſe of which we mean to examine. It contains one hundred and fifty-ſix years: this ſpace we divide into three parts, giving them the names of thoſe ſovereigns, who acted the moſt conſiderable parts at the time. The firſt is called that of Charles V, and carried down to the abdication of the empire made by that prince in 1556. The ſecond comprehends the reign of Philip II, and terminates with the death of Henry IV, in 1610. The third, which begins with the acceſſion of Lewis XIII, concludes with the peace of Weſtphalia.

ITATY now enjoyed a ſtate of tranquility that ſhe had not experienced before, ſince the days of Auguſtus, but the ambition of a private man ſet her in a flame from one extremity to the other. Ludovic Sforca, not ſatisfied with the authority he had uſurped at Milan, ſtill envied his nephew the title he had left him, and wiſhed to deprive him of that and life; but the treacherous villain dreaded to find avengers, who might either puniſh his crime, or make advantage of it. Galeas

was

was ſon-in-law to the king of Naples, and his ſiſter had married duke Ferdinand. Medicis was devoted to the former of thoſe two princes, and ready to embrace the intereſt of his daughter. The dukes of Savoy wiſhed rather to ſee Lombardy in the hands of the weak Galeas, than to have ſo dangerous a neighbour as Ludovic, whoſe reſolution was equal to his ambition. The pope lately elected, was naturally inclined to favour the family of Arragon, as he was born their ſubject. Ludovic ſaw no other way to ſurmount ſo many obſtacles but to ſet all Italy on fire, and to have the flames kindled by a monarch powerful enough to deſtroy his enemies. He fixed his eyes on Charles VIII, and invited him to the conqueſt of Naples. He reminded him of the rights of the family of Anjou to that throne; a family who had long enjoyed it, and to whom Charles himſelf was the legitimate heir. He inflamed the young prince, by ſetting before his eyes the honour of recovering a ſceptre that had ſo often dropped from the hands of the French. He ſhewed him the facility of the enterprize in the deſcription he gave of the court of Ferdinand, and his ſon Alphonſus, who were both alike deteſted by their ſubjects. He aſſured him that it would be an eaſy matter to gain over the new pontiff, who was always ready to abandon his allies upon the leaſt proſpect of advantage. That the Venetians would rejoice in a confuſion that they might turn to advantage, and the Florentines would readily grant a paſſage and aſſiſtance to be delivered from a tyrant whom they abhorred.

Ludovic prevailed on the flatterers and favourites of the monarch to join in the deſign. The wiſer part of the council, in vain, ſhewed that there would be invincible difficulties in the attempt. Charles was dazzled with the ſplendor of the undertaking, and thought of nothing but the pleaſure of executing it. He was hurried on by the inconſiderate valour of a court who conſidered nothing but the glory of avenging the ancient houſe of Anjou, and of making all Europe reſound with the French name.

The only difficulty now with the young prince was, how to remove thoſe obſtacles that might impede his deſigns. He gained over the avaricious Henry VII, with conſiderable ſums; he gave up Cerdaigne and Rouſillon to the ambitious Ferdinand of Caſtile; and was content with the bare word of that prince, who was the moſt prodigal man of the age of promiſes and oaths, and the leaſt faithful in obſerving them. He took ten thouſand Swiſs into pay, to thoſe he added the flower of his troops. Theſe forces were much increaſed at Lyons by the arrival of a great number of the nobility, who were impatient to ſignalize their valour, and to ſhare part of the laurels which their maſter was about to reap. The army had now reached the Milaneſe, where they found Ludovic, who came to animate Charles, and urge him in the purſuit of victory.

The barbarous man, now aſſured of a protection that removed all his fears, did not heſitate to ſtrike the blow that was to ſecure his greatneſs. Galeas was poiſoned by the contrivance of his uncle

uncle, and his ſon robbed him of the ſceptre. The French army exclaimed with indignation againſt a villain who had ſeduced them ſo far, only to protect him in his crimes, but in vain. The king, full of his project, ſhut his eyes to the wickedneſs of his ally, and advanced towards Tuſcany. Peter de Medicis endeavoured to ſtop him, but his imprudent zeal was uſeleſs to his friend and fatal to himſelf.

After his defeat he in vain appeared as a ſuppliant in the camp, to implore the clemency of the conqueror. He was ſacrificed to his enemies, and obliged to fly to Venice; and this deſcendant of princes, who were ſo famous for their riches, became a wretched fugitive, and died in want and miſery. Charles marched directly to Florence: the magiſtrates quickly opened the gates, and he entered with all the pomp of a conqueror. The city exulted in their deliverance from oppreſſion, liberty was reſtored, and the republic ſeemed to revive. The Medicis were proſcribed by public edicts, their fortunes confiſcated, their palaces deſtroyed, their ſtatues thrown down and daſhed to pieces, and that of the pretended deliverer erected in their place.

Charles, vain on having changed the condition of ſo famous a city, directed his courſe towards Rome, which he approached in a hoſtile manner. The famous Borgia then reigned under the name of Alexander VI. He was born a private gentleman in the kingdom of Valencia, and had early devoted himſelf to intrigue and debauchery. He had ambition, art and diſſimulation; was proud and mean on occaſion, ſuperior

to

to every ſcruple, and incapable of all remorſe. He had the talent to make religion, which he deſpiſed, and virtue, to which he was a ſtranger, ſerviceable to his deſigns. This ſucceſsful villain found means to unite the charms of pleaſure with the advantage of obtaining the moſt ſacred dignities. A ſon no leſs profligate than the father, but of ſuperior abilities, purſued the ſame plan. He was the delight of the pontiff who had lately adorned him with the purple. To enrich this ſon to make him a powerful ſovereign, or, at leaſt, to ſecure him the ſucceſſion to the papal throne, was the object of both, and to accompliſh their aim, they were ready to commit every ſpecies of perfidy and villainy. Alexander, ſenſible that his debaucheries were a ſcandal to the chriſtian world, trembled at the approach of a king, who had the power to puniſh him; not having forces to make any reſiſtance, he ſhut himſelf up in the caſtle of Saint Angelo, with Borgia and Zizim, that unfortunate ſon of Mahomet, who, after being made a tool to the intereſts of the knights of Rhodes, to whom he had flown for ſhelter, had been lately delivered up to the Borgias. They made Bajazet pay for keeping this prince a captive.

Charles arrived and entered Rome by the light of torches. The terror of the Romans increaſed with the return of day, when they ſaw the colours flying, the troops under arms, and a formidable train of artillery in their principal ſtreets and ſquares. The pontiff, ſenſible that he had no other chance of extricating himſelf, entered into

into a negociation with the French monarch. Having learned his character, he laid before the ambitious youth, objects more flattering, and greater ſtill than the conqueſt he had in view. He repreſented that the poſſeſſion of Zizim, would furniſh him with effectual means of weakening and diſtracting the Ottoman empire, ſo as to make it an eaſy prey. He pointed out to him at the ſame time, the way to acquire a title to the throne of Conſtantinople, that he might have it transferred to him by John Paleologue. This contemptible and wretched heir of the Greek emperors ſubſiſted at Rome, on the compaſſion of the pope.

CHARLES, dazzled with the imperial title, forgot, in an inſtant, every motive of reſentment he had againſt the Borgias, and became deaf to the prayers of Europe, who preſſed and intreated him to drive the infamous pontiff from the throne of the church which he had diſgraced. Peace was concluded between thoſe two great powers; they appeared in public together as the moſt intimate friends. The Freneh ſovereign became the protector of the pope. The pontiff, on his part, ſeemed eager to execute the conditions of the treaty. Paleologue actually ſold his pretenſions, and the Ottoman prince was delivered up to the monarch, who was crowned in the moſt ſolemn manner. The death of the unhappy Zizim, who was poiſoned a few days after, opened the eyes of all the French, except thoſe of their maſter. He had ſo great a confidence in the Borgias, he confirmed their tyranny and aſſiſted their uſurpations,

pations, and then proceeded on his march to Naples.

FERDINAND I, was now no more, no leſs daſtardly than cruel, he had fallen a ſudden victim to his fears at the approach of danger: his ſon Alphonſus, equally vicious, and weaker ſtill than his father, fled to Sicily, where he abdicated the crown in favour of Ferdinand II. Ferdinand, who had both wiſdom and valour, gave way to neceſſity, and retired to a neighbouring iſland, to wait for ſome favourable change, which he expected either from the imprudence of the conqueror, the inconſtancy of his people, the intrigues of Rome, or the aſſiſtance of his allies.

CHARLES in the mean time, penetrated into the heart of the kingom, and while his generals were reducing the moſt remote parts, he advanced towards the capital. He made his public entry into Naples, with the moſt pompous train and flattering proſpects. Followed by his army, and preceded by the Roman eagles, he appeared in the imperial mantle. The crown worn by the Cæſars, on his head, a ſword in one hand, and the globe in the other. The whole city was, in a manner, gathered round him, and rent the ſkies with exclamations of Auguſt Saviour. The government of the family of Arragon, was not only abjured, but even the moſt precious traces of their authority deſtroyed. Every monument of the faction of Anjou, was replaced with pomp and ſplendor, and the arms of France were diſplayed on all the public buildings. But the extraordinary

mildneſs

mildneſs of the climate, and the voluptuous allurements which tempted Charles on every ſide, ſoon baniſhed all the mighty projects that before poſſeſſed his mind.

The young monarch was ſo far inebriated with the bewitching ſtreams of pleaſure, that it ſeemed as if he had marched to ſuch a diſtance from home with no other view but to ſpend his days in ſenſual enjoyments. The court and army followed his example, and gave looſe reins to their licentious appetites. Naples complained that their new maſters were mere libidinous tyrants, who inſulted modeſty and decency, violated the privileges of the nation, and plundered the fortunes of individuals. The French were deaf to thoſe complaints, and in thoughtleſs ſecurity, while the ableſt politicians in Europe were at work to deſtroy them. Alexander VI was uneaſy at having ſuch powerful and imperious neighbours; the Venetians were in hopes that a change might furniſh them with opportunities of making new conqueſts. The king of Caſtile was mortified to hear that the French were maſters of a throne which had been in the poſſeſſion of his family ſo long; Maximilian who lately ſucceeded his father, and who had all the fire that he wanted, imagined the time was come to revenge the injury Charles had done him in depriving him of his intended conſort with the province of Britanny; in fine, Ludovic himſelf, who had invited thoſe ſtrangers into Italy, could not ſee without pain, the elevation and power of a people whoſe princes had inconteſtible claims upon

the

the dutchy over which he reigned. A private league was formed by thoſe ſovereigns, who all conſpired to attack Charles and cut off his retreat.

In the hour of joy and feſtivity, at an entertainment given by the French monarch, he was informed that all the forces of Italy were preparing to fall upon him. News was brought him at the ſame time that the people, having intelligence of the conſpiracy, were riſen to revenge the wrongs done them by the conqueror, and invited young Ferdinand to the throne of his anceſtors. The only alternative that ſeemed left to Charles, was either to act upon the defenſive with all his forces, or to form them into one body, and force his way ſword in hand, and travel over two hundred leagues to regain the frontiers of his dominions. As he had but a ſmall army, the worſt reſolution he could poſſibly take was to divide it; this was, however, the meaſure he purſued. He left Bourbon de Montpenſier and Stuart d'Aubigny in the kingdom of Naples with four thouſand, the reſt he led towards the north.

In his march, he gave ſome alarm to Rome, but went no farther than to oblige the Borgias to ſhut themſelves up in Orvietto. He then returned to Florence, where he loſt time that was ſo precious in uſeleſs debates.

He there received advice, that his relation, the duke of Orleans, whom he had called to his aſſiſtance, had been idly engaged in attempting to ſubdue the Milaneſe; that he was defeated by Ludovic, and blocked up in Novara, where he was in danger of loſing his liberty. This diſagreeable

intelligence rouſed the courage of Charles. He marched haſtily towards Lombardy, till he reached Fornoua, a village in the neighbourhood of Placentia. Forty thouſand men were there ready to oppoſe his paſſage, and looked upon the monarch as a certain prey. Never, perhaps, did the valour of the French nation appear in a more glorious light than on this occaſion. Seven thouſand men threw the whole adverſe army into confuſion, broke through their ranks, and were ſo formidable even in their retreat, that the enemies were intimidated, and did not dare to follow them but at a diſtance.

A PRINCE leſs negligent would, in all probability, have retorted upon Ludovic, every misfortune in which he had involved the French. But Charles devoting himſelf to eaſe and pleaſure, when he arrived on the confines of Piedmont, ſaved the tyrant, who preſerved his uſurpation by means of a treaty, in which he gave nothing but vain promiſes.

WHILE the French retreated to their own country with precipitation, Ferdinand of Naples recovered his kingdom. Alexander VI, furniſhed him with troops, the Venetians lent him their fleets, and the king of Arragon ſent a ſmall body of men, who were looked upon as the beſt ſoldiers in the world, and commanded by the great Gonzalva. Montpenſier, who was charged with the defence of the northern provinces, had neither the activity or the abilities, neceſſary to reſiſt the ſuperior forces of the enemy. D' Aubigny, who commanded in Calabria, was more worthy of the confidence of his ſovereign. He behaved with heroic valour at the battle of

Seminara

Seminara which he gained, and forced the Spaniſh general to ſhut himſelf up in a caſtle. But fortune ſoon turned againſt the French commander.

GONZALVA, who had a capacity to convert every circumſtance to advantage, reſtored new vigour to his party, aſſembled his allies, ſtarved the enemy, and deſtroyed them piece meal. Montpenſier ſhut up in a place, without troops or proviſions, was obliged to ſubmit to a diſhonourable capitulation, and deliver up the provinces under his command.

THE courage of D'Aubigny retarded his deſtruction for ſome time, but he was at length overpowered by numbers, and the abilities of the greateſt general of the age. The kingdom of Naples was reſtored to Ferdinand; Lombardy remained with Ludovic; and the Venetians kept poſſeſſion in both ſtates, of the places they had ſeized, under pretence of defending them.

ALEXANDER, now delivered of thoſe apprehenſions which the near vicinity of the French occaſioned, reſumed with ardour, the deſign of forming a ſovereignty for his ſon; the cardinal at the head of the forces of his father, diſplayed talents, by which, and the ſeaſonable application of perfidy and cruelty, he triumphed over the petty tyrants whoſe ſpoils he retained.

ITALY was now in hopes of enjoying ſome tranquility, when the French having changed their maſter, threatened her with new ſtorms. Charles VIII, after a ſhort and tumultuous reign, died in the flower of his age, and left the ſceptre to his couſin the duke of Orleans. This prince, under the name of Lewis XII, ſoon reſumed the projects

of his predeceſſor. He had, with the ſame title to the kingdom of Naples, pretenſions ſtill clearer to Lombardy. The remembrance of the perfidy of Ludovic, animated him with the deſire of chaſtiſing him; his reſentment and ardour were powerfully inflamed by the ſuggeſtions of his miniſters. George d' Amboiſe is on of thoſe names that we cannot pronounce without emotion. He was the confident of his ſovereign and protector of the people. He was fortunate enough to govern under a monarch, who made the happineſs of the ſubject the baſis of his own, and thought it his duty to cheriſh this generous ambition in the breaſt of his ſovereign. He repreſented to the feelings of a tender maſter, the tears of the diſtreſſed, and pointed out a way to dry them up. They were both the delight of the nation, and as ſuch, merited a place among the illuſtrious heroes of immortality. But they had their failings too. Lewis was generous and open, but deſtitute of that prudent diffidence which is neceſſary to the great; the ambition and credulity of the other, often made him the dupe of thoſe with whom he treated, and the people became victims to thoſe illuſions.

George, ſeduced by the idea of obtaining the pontificate, thought it excuſeable to ſacrifice every thing to that favourite object; and being perſuaded that a body of troops under his command, in the neighbourhood of Rome, would extort the ſuffrages in his favour, he urged every argument in his power, to engage Lewis to ſend an army to that quarter.

Measures were better concerted on this occaſion. The monarch was convinced that no ſucceſs

was

was to be expected without the concurrence of the pope. He therefore ſought his friendſhip, and took the moſt effectual method to ſecure it. He heaped favours and riches on Cæſar Borgia, and ſeeing him diſguſted with a profeſſion ſo ill ſuited to his taſte and inclination, he conferred the dutchy of Valentinois on that favourite ſon of the pontiff. He conciliated at the ſame time, the friendſhip of the Venetians, and gained over Maximilian to his intereſt, from whom he obtained the inveſtiture of the Milaneſe.

In this manner was Italy a ſecond time in flames, and the greateſt monarchs conſpired againſt her peace. In the ſpace of a month Milan was taken, and Ludovic, with his children, obliged to fly for ſhelter to Germany. Fortune, indeed, re-eſtabliſhed him in his poſſeſſions, but it was only to betray him; the Swiſs, who had brought back victory to his ſtandard, abandoned him; and the unfortunate prince having fallen into the hands of his implacable enemy, was thrown into a horrid dungeon, where he languiſhed for ten years, until death at length releaſed him from his ſufferings.

The fortune of the French monarch ſeemed firmly eſtabliſhed in Lombardy. Parmà and Placentia ſubmitted to his yoke, and Genoa having rebelled, owed her preſervation to the clemency alone of the prince who ſubdued her in perſon.

The ſucceſs of France was not leſs glorious in Naples. Lewis entered into a negociation with the king of Arragon, and agreed to ſhare that kingdom with him, after they had conquered it. Ferdinand

of Naples was now no more, and his uncle Frederic had aſcended the fatal throne. How was it poſſible for him to reſiſt two of the moſt powerful monarchs, with the moſt warlike nations, and the greateſt generals of the age? Stuart d' Aubigny, at the head of the French, took poſſeſſion of Abruzzo, and the capital of the kingdom, while the great Gonzalva, aſſiſted by Anthony de Leva, quickly ſubjected Calabria and Pouille.

Frederic, born down by his misfortunes, diſdained the offer of an aſylum made by the perfidious relation who had plundered him. He preferred the protection of an enemy, whom he thought more generous, and retired to France, where he ſought comfort in the boſom of philoſophy and learning.

The two victorious nations did not remain long united; a ſmall province, of which the limits had not been exactly aſcertained, became an object of ambitious contention to both. They took up arms, and attacked each other with greater fury than they had ſhewn in ſtripping the legitimate ſovereign. The French being ſuperior in number, preſſed the Spaniards, defeated and diſpoſſeſſed them, and D' Aubigny once more blocked up Gonzalva.

In this ſituation, the abilities of the Spaniſh general were particularly diſplayed. He amuſed the army with negociations, obtained a truce from the French commander, who knew how to conquer, but not to make a right uſe of his victory. During thoſe precious moments he made friends, increaſed his little army by deſerters, and procured powerful

powerful ſuccours from Venice. His maſter ſeconded him with the ſame art; he entered into a treaty with Lewis, which ſuſpended the operations of the French troops, and made advantage of the time he gained by this pretended peace. Gonzalva was ſoon at the head of a conſiderable army, and in a condition to dictate. Then, pretending to diſobey the orders of his court, he fell upon the French, who, lulled by the appearance of peace, were immerſed in pleaſure.

Anthony De Leva purſued D' Aubigny, and defeated him in the very plains of Seminara, where this Scotch captain had triumphed ſome years before. Gonzalva marched in perſon againſt d' Armaguac, attacked him at Cerignoles, obtained a moſt bloody victory, and made one half of the French army priſoners. After this, every thing gave way before the Spaniard, and the two Scicilies have been ſubject to the crown of Spain ever ſince.

Lewis endeavoured to avenge thoſe loſſes, but all his endeavours were ineffectual, and ſerved only to exhauſt his kingdom. His army miſcarried in Navarre, was defeated in Rouſillon, and exterminated on the frontiers of Naples. The death of Alexander VI, was a new ſource of diſappointments; freſh troops being ſent to attempt a ſecond conqueſt, were detained near Rome by George d' Amboiſe, with a view to awe the conclave: but that miniſter was the dupe of his rivals, and loſt the Tiara himſelf, and Naples at the ſame time to his maſter. Pius III only made his appearance on the throne of the church, and the ſame cardi-

nal who had twice eluded the ambition of the French, was unanimouſly elected in his place.

Rome has had few pontiffs more aſtoniſhing than Rovera, ſo well known by the name of Julius II: he had ſcarce aſcended the throne, when he formed the moſt exalted projects, and conducted them with no leſs reſolution than prudence. In the northern parts of his dominions, he ſaw a ſtate formed by Cæſar Borgia, on the ruins of thoſe uſurpers whom that tyrant had exterminated. He found the Venetians in poſſeſſion of many places which, he imagined, belonged to his ſee; he was enraged to ſee all Italy in alternate ſubjection to the Spaniards, French and Germans, whom he ſtyled barbarians. To diſpoſſeſs the firſt, to force the ſecond to give up their uſurpations, and drive out the reſt, were the objects that Julius had in view to accompliſh.

He began with Borgia, whom he baniſhed, after obliging him to deliver up the places he had conquered; he ſent to demand back the cities which the Venetians had ſeized upon; and finding them obſtinate in their refuſal, he reſolved to call in againſt that republic, thoſe very people whom he intended at a future period to drive out.

Circumstances conſpired to humble Venice. The proſperity of that city had inſpired the inhabitants with a pride and haughtineſs that could not fail being fatal to their happineſs. Maximilian, whoſe entrance into Italy they had oppoſed, burned with impatience to avenge that inſult; Lewis XII ſtill preſerved his reſentment againſt them on account

account of the ſuccours they had afforded to his rivals; the king of Spain, influenced by motives of intereſt as the pope, wiſhed to recover the cities they had taken in the kingdom of Naples, during the late troubles. Julius, active, pliant and reſolute, undertook to foment all thoſe ſeveral paſſions, and had the art to unite in the ſame deſign ſo many powers whoſe intereſts were widely different, and concealing his views even from thoſe he made inſtrumental to their accompliſhment, he affected a reſolution to deſtroy the people whom he meant only to humble. Thus the famous convention of Cambray was concerted, which induced four of the greateſt ſovereigns in the world to agree to employ all their forces againſt a ſingle republic.

Maximilian undertook to attack the Venetians on the north ſide; Lewis promiſed to penetrate into their dominions through the Milaneſe, of which he was maſter; Ferdinand was to ſend a fleet to deſtroy their gulph; and Julius reſolved to let fall all the thunders of excommunication on their heads. Venice behaved with a ſpirit and dignity that did her honour; ſhe rejected the ſecret offers of the pope, who promiſed to diſpel the ſtorm if ſhe would make a ſubmiſſion; ſhe refuſed the aſſiſtance of Bazajet, becauſe the wiſe ſenate conſidered the meaſure dangerous. Truſting to no other ſtrength but her own, ſhe reſolved to ſet all her engines at work, in order to oppoſe the enemy on every ſide. Her firſt efforts proved ſucceſsful. Maximilian, ever ſlow in execution, as he was quick in deliberation, gave them time

to

to defend the frontiers of Germany. Ferdinand, who never conſulted any thing but his own intereſt, neglected to ſend the promiſed fleets, and contented himſelf with re-taking the places of which he had been diſpoſſeſſed.

The pontiff, in a body which ſo many winters ſhould have frozen, had all the fire of youth. His actions were greater than his promiſes: finding his anathemas were impotent weapons, he levied troops, began hoſtilities, and called in the French, whom he conſidered as the moſt effectual inſtruments of his vengeance. Lewis XII, headed the troops in perſon; he had under him the Nemours, the Foix, the Trivulces, and Trimouilles; the flower of the French knights followed their maſter, whom they in a manner adored; and among the reſt, the famous Bayard, who was looked upon as the beſt ſoldier, and what was ſtill more glorious, the man of the greateſt integrity in Europe. The Venetians ſent a flouriſhing army againſt the enemy, under the command of Alviano, one of the greateſt captains in Italy. Learning, arts and policy, then centered among the Italians. But ſtrength, valour, and military diſcipline were to be found only among the French, Swiſs and Spaniards. All the abilities of the general of the republic, were inſufficient to atone for the weakneſs and inexperience of his men, or to ſtop that impetuous courage, which the aſtoniſhment and terror of Italy, characterized by the name of rage. The army was totally overthrown, the ſtandards of St. Mark taken, and Alviano, with difficulty, eſcaped falling into the hands of the enemy.

Lewis

Lewis, who conquered every ſtep he advanced, marched haſtily towards the gulph: Maximilian, animated by the ſucceſs of his ally, ravaged the borders of the Adigo; Julius ſpread confuſion through the capital, by terrifying the conſciences of the inhabitants with his anathemas, while the prince of Arragon, with his fleets, threatened to extirpate that imperious miſtreſs of the ſea. The ſtate loſt, in a ſingle campaign, all the provinces which her policy, for two centuries, had acquired. Ancient Rome, in a ſimilar ſituation, confiding in the unſhaken valour of her citizens, who were like ſo many heroes, deſpiſed the thunderers of her foes, and, at length, triumphed by perſeverance and reſolution.

But Venice could ſee no ſuch reſources in the fears and deſpondency of her inhabitants, and was ſenſible, that another plan muſt be adopted to prevent her ruin. Julius was the ſoul of the conſpiracy formed againſt her, that Julius, whoſe pride ſhe had offended and poſſeſſions ſhe retained. She humbled herſelf before him, and by reſtoring the cities and making a neceſſary ſubmiſſion, ſhe was ſecretly reconciled to the pontiff, who already grew uneaſy at the ſucceſſes of the French. Similar methods made their peace with Ferdinand, who had the like view, and felt the ſame alarms. The republic being thus freed from two powerful enemies, who even aſſiſted her clandeſtinely, ſhe collected all her forces againſt Lewis and Maximilian, who were both already weakened by the heat of the climate, and the libidinous exceſſes of the ſoldiery. The abſence of Lewis, who had returned

turned to France, occaſioned diſſentions among the generals. The Venetians artfully took advantage of their miſunderſtanding, and were ſoon in a condition to counterbalance their ſucceſs. They had ſtill greater advantages over Maximilian; they re-took Padua from that emperor; after defeating his army in the field, they obliged him to retreat behind the mountains that covered his hereditary dominions. Upon this, the pope and the king of Spain threw off the maſk and openly declared war againſt France.

The republic ſoon recovered the greateſt part of what ſhe had loſt; then uniting with her new allies, ſhe attacked the French, and purſued their friend the duke of Ferrara, whom Julius wanted to ſtrip of his poſſeſſions. The pope headed the armies, ſettled the operations of a campaign, regulated the order of a battle; beſieged one city, ſtormed another, was carried in a litter to the trenches which he directed, and entered cities through the breaches made by his artillery. On the part of France, D'Ars, Lautrec, and particularly the immortal Bayard, ſignalized themſelves by heroic actions, retarded their deſtruction by mere dint of valour, and made themſelves formidable in the very midſt of diſtreſſes. Their misfortunes ſuddenly diſappeared, and victory returned to the ſtandard of Lewis. Gaſton de Foix, duke of Nemours, a young hero, the hopes of France, and the nephew of his ſovereign, appeared at the head of his uncle's forces, and marched in triumph through the north of Italy. He preſerved the Milaneſe by the wiſdom of his meaſures, diſ-

poſſeſſed

poſſeſſed the Venetians of the city of Breſſe, drove the pope from the neighbourhood of Bologna, and marched to attack the confederates under the walls of Ravenna. A memorable battle decided entirely by the genius and courage of Gaſton, ſeemed to have deſtroyed the enemies of France, but only renewed her misfortunes. The death of the conqueror, who was killed in the midſt of his triumphs, threw the army into deſpair, and left it to generals whom envy and hatred diſunited. Julius, the moſt expert of mankind, at repairing his diſappointments, haſtened to take advantage of this confuſion, collected the ſcattered remains of the allies, and attacked the enemy with more vigour than ever. Lewis, animated by a juſt indignation, thought to ſtrike a deciſive blow, by aſſembling a council, in hopes of depoſing the pope.

In concert with Maximilian, he appointed one of thoſe aſſemblies at Piſa, where the biſhops of Germany, in conjunction with thoſe of France, cited their chief to appear; and were preparing to try him; but Julius quickly oppoſed them with ſimilar weapons; he called a council at Rome, to excommunicate his enemies, with the aſſembly that favoured their deſigns. His intrigues, at the ſame time, excited all Europe againſt them, and ſeduced the allies of France from her intereſt. The fickle Maximilian diſavowed the convocation of Piſa, withdrew his biſhops, quickly acknowleged the authority of the oppoſite council, and granted the ſame inveſtiture of Milan to the ſon of Ludovic, which he had before given to

Lewis.

Lewis. The cardinal of Syon, a ſingular man, who by the moſt ſtupid harrangues, had the art to govern the minds of a ſuperſtitious people, ſo far wrought upon the Swiſs, that they reinſtated the young Sforca, and drove the French out of Milan, while the armies of the pope and Ferdinand attacked them in the dutchy of Ferrara. Genoa, who never was ſteady in the choice of her maſters, followed the torrent of the revolution, and proſcribed the garriſon Lewis had placed in the citadel. Thus the French were driven beyond the Alps, and no longer governed any of thoſe rich provinces which they had poſſeſſed in Italy, and coſt them ſo much blood.

The council of Piſa was obliged to fly from city to city, and at length concluded with playing the moſt vain and ridiculous part at Lyons, while the council of Latran continued their imperious ſeſſions, cited Lewis to appear before them, interdicted his kingdom, thundered out anathemas againſt his adherents, and ventured to declare the king of Navarre fallen from the throne. Neceſſity made this prince a conſtant friend to France. Ferdinand, with the bull of the pope in his hand, immediately ſent the duke of Alva into Navarre, where that general diſpoſſeſſed John D'Albret, of a kingdom that has never ſince returned to the legitimate maſter. Julius II, raiſed all thoſe different ſtorms, and was already flattering himſelf with the hopes of ſeeing the throne of his adverſary ſubverted, when death terminated the life of that violent old man. To conſider Julius as a pontiff, he was far from meriting any reſpect from

poſterity;

poſterity; intrigues, war and pleaſure made his pontificate almoſt as ſcandalous as that of Borgia; but if we view him in the light of a ſovereign only, we cannot but admire him. By his capacity, activity, and talents, he was the ſoul of the commotions which convulſed the ſouthern parts of Italy, and he never failed to make thoſe commotions ſubſervient to the proſperity of the ſtate, over which he preſided. He added much to the poſſeſſions of his predeceſſors; he anihilated the power of a ſwarm of petty tyrants, who diſtreſſed the places contiguous to his capital; he embelliſhed Rome; reſtoredher antiquities; adorned her with new maſter-pieces of art; in ſhort, he was a friend to all the learned, and a protector to theſe artiſts who made Italy ſo illuſtrious in thoſe days.

A SIMILAR love of glory, a genius equally ſublime and extenſive, a greater art in his views, a more refined and judicious taſte for the fine arts, a more engaging diſpoſition, a greater ſweetneſs of manners, gave Italy an earneſt of that happineſs ſhe was about to enjoy under the ſucceſſor of Julius. Cardinal Julian deſcended from the blood of the Medicis, and heir to the genius of Laurence and Coſmo, excited admiration, at an age when others give no more than uncertain hopes. He had been the confidant of all the deſigns of his predeceſſor, and frequently the main ſpring of his ſucceſſes. The unanimous voice of the people declared for him, their opinion was confirmed by the ſuffrages of the conclave, and the new pontiff aſſumed the name of Leo X. Lewis XII,

flattered

flattered himſelf with ſome return of fortune; he had regained the friendſhip of the Venetians, and his arms had, for the third time, taken poſſeſſion of the Milaneſe; but Leo quickly blaſted this appearance of happineſs. The French found themſelves attacked with equal violence and more judgment. The Milaneſe, that eternal object of their deſires, was taken from them again. Genoa ſhook off their yoke a third time. The Swiſs, who were returned from the conqueſt of Navarre, ravaged Burgundy, and filled Paris with terror and alarm. The Engliſh had landed in Flanders, were victorious at Guinegate, and laid waſte the northern provinces. John D'Albret attempted to re-enter his kingdom, and was repulſed; James IV, in his endeavour to make a deverſion in favour of his ally, was defeated and killed. Lewis thus preſſed on all ſides, yielded to neceſſity, and was obliged to humble to his enemy. The council of Piſa was diſavowed; the cardinals who had preſided in that aſſembly, implored the clemency of Leo, with the moſt degrading formalities.

The family of Sforca were confirmed in their poſſeſſions. Ferdinand remained maſter of Navarre, and the weak unfortunate d'Albret was ſtripped of his inheritance. Lewis, after ſo many diſappointments and loſſes, found conſolation in the moſt generous purſuits. All his projects being vaniſhed, he devoted himſelf entirely to his people; to gain their hearts, and make them happy, the ſweeteſt and nobleſt pleaſure of a ſovereign, was now his ſole ambition and delight. Exceſſive complaiſance for a young conſort accelerated his death.

He

He carried with him to the tomb, the univerſal regret of his country, and the veneration of all Europe. This prince was, however, a weak politician, and had been the dupe of both friends and enemies. His obſtinate and vain perſeverance in thoſe chimerical purſuits in Italy, which coſt humanity ſo much blood, was inexcuſable. We are grieved to ſee a man of ſuch goodneſs of heart, forming ſo cloſe a connection with the Borgias and protecting their crimes. An object ſtill more painful is to ſee him ſo cruelly perſecute Ludovic, and condemn to a gibbet two Venetian ſenators, becauſe they had the courage to defend a city committed to their care and fidelity. But thoſe clouds vaniſh before the ſplendor of the virtues which made Lewis the delight of his people. He ſighed when neceſſity obliged him to lay on taxes. However jealous he might have been in regard to his conqueſts, he gave them up rather than diſtreſs his people by preſerving them. The immortal ſpeech he made when he aſcended the throne, is known to every body. *A king of France*, ſaid he, *does not revenge injuries that were done to a duke of Orleans.* The anſwer he returned, upon being informed that ſome low comedians had made the ſpectators laugh at the repreſentation of his pretended avarice, can never be repeated too often. *I am much better pleaſed*, he ſaid, *that the people ſhould laugh at my oeconomy, than that they ſhould weep on account of my profuſion and extravagance.* At his death all France was in mourning and tears. She bewailed his loſs as that of a father, a name which the people gratefully beſtowed on his memory,

and infinitely more glorious than all the pompous titles with which flattery has decorated ambition.

FRANCIS I, ſon to the count of Angouleme and Louiſa of Savoy, ſucceeded to the ſceptre of his couſin, married his daughter, and reſumed his projects. He was young, active, ambitious of glory, generous, haughty, incapable of admitting a ſuperior, determined every thing by force of arms, and was the moſt valiant prince of his time. He ſaw with indignation that the Milaneſe had been taken from his predeceſſor, and flattered himſelf that with the ſame title he ſhould have better ſucceſs.

FORTUNE at firſt anſwered his confidence and hopes: he obliged the duke of Savoy to give up the paſſes; he compelled Maximilian to retire when he attempted to diſpute them; he triumphed over the troops of Italy which Sforca had brought againſt him, and marched for Milan. Every thing ſeemed to promiſe a quiet ſurrender of the place when he met the Swiſs, who, urged on by Leo, advanced againſt him, with all that courage and ſtrength that had been ſo formidable for above a century. Marignan, a ſmall village of Lombardy, became the theatre whereon the moſt valiant troops in Europe, fought with a rage and obſtinacy of which there have been few examples. The battle continued two days; Francis paſſed the knight in the field where it was given, and, at the firſt return of day, renewed the fight. Every prodigy of valour was performed in this dreadful conflict. Francis rode about, gave orders, ſhared in the dangers every where, and at length triumphed over

an

an enemy who was rather tired out than overcome. They defeated the Venetians in their retreat, and returned to their mountains in good order. After this nothing reſiſted the enſigns of France. The victorious Francis entered Milan in triumph, and all the other cities followed the example of the capital. Sforca was obliged to make a ſolemn abdication, and went to France to end his life and misfortunes. Genoa put up French colours, and from the Alps to the ſea all that part of Italy was again fallen under the yoke of France. Leo, terrified at thoſe great ſucceſſes, diſſembled his reſentment, and ſolicited a peace, the conditions of which were dictated by Francis. The cities that had been taken from the Venetians were reſtored, and the gratitude of the ſenate immortalized the favours of the victor by unparalleled honours that were granted to his family. Europe viewed him with eyes of admiration, and already declared him the firſt of her princes.

ENGLAND did not long enjoy the tranquility, which the prudence of Henry VII, had procured her. A new impoſtor, more artful and dangerous, made his appearance on the ſcene, and diſturbed the peace of the ſovereign as well as that of the nation. The dutcheſs dowager of Burgundy, a princeſs of the blood of York, was ſtill living in Flanders; being no leſs ſubtle than implacable in her revenge, ſhe contrived the moſt ſingular ſtratagem in order to ruin Henry, in whom ſhe purſued the family of Lancaſter with hereditary reſentment. Perkin, originally a jew, was born in a little town of Flanders, where his parents car-

ried on a petty traffic. Nature had given him a very advantageous figure, and a diſpoſition well adapted to perform the part of an adventurer. The dutcheſs was made acquainted with the young man by her emiſſaries, and thinking him a very proper inſtrument for her purpoſes, privately intimated the ſplendid condition to which ſhe intended to raiſe him; truſty perſons, who were commiſſioned to inſtruct him, taught him every thing neceſſary to give an air of probability to the fabulous ſtory he was to publiſh. When they thought him ſufficiently prepared, he was conducted to the reſidence of the princeſs, where he declared himſelf to be one of the ſons of Edward IV, who had eſcaped from the barbarous hand of Richard III. The dutcheſs at firſt, ſeemed to deſpiſe the report and reject it as a fiction; afterwards, as if overcome by the ſolicitation of the people about her, ſhe conſented to ſee the young adventurer, and examined him in the preſence of the principal lords of her court; ſhe put the moſt perplexing queſtions to him, and appeared aſtoniſhed at his regular and explicit anſwers. This farce was played over for ſeveral days together; then pretending to be overcome by the force of truth, ſhe embraced him with tranſport and tears as a ſon of Edward. Perkin ſeconded the ſchemes of his protectreſs amazingly well. All Europe echoed with his complaints and pretenſions to the throne of the Edwards. He met with no encouragement in Portugal; in Ireland all declared in his favour; France affected to believe his ſtory, in order to alarm Henry who menaced her coaſts; in Scotland he was treated as a

king,

king, and obtained a relation of James IV, in marriage.

Assisted by the forces of this kingdom, he entered Northumberland, and ravaged the country. He publiſhed manifeſtoes againſt Henry, ſet a price upon his head, and even alarmed the capital. He was, however, ſacrificed to the peace that was concluded between both kingdoms, and obliged to fly into the ſouthern counties, where fortune ſeemed to favour him more than ever. The people diſſatisfied with the taxes laid upon them by a monarch every way reſpectable, but in his paſſion for riches, united with the friends of the York family, and both proclaimed Perkin, who had a numerous army marching under his banners, with a reſolution to place him on the throne. In this dangerous ſituation Henry conceived and purſued every meaſure that human wiſdom could ſuggeſt. He began with an inquiry into the origin and adventures of the counterfeit prince that was ſet againſt him; he had the art to place people about the impoſtor, who acquired his confidence and ſtudied his connections and proceedings. He was lucky enough to trace the correſpondence with the dutcheſs, and that clue ſoon led him to a diſcovery of all the different ſprings of the machine. Able writers then ſet forth thoſe particulars, which, being properly diſperſed, deprived the counterfeit York of many adherents. Henry raiſed an army at the ſame time, and advanced to attack his rival.

The danger was, however, ſtill great; the ſoldiers of his competitor ſhewed the utmoſt ſpirit and reſolution, and the ſucceſs of a battle might realize

the title of the impoſtor. But the cowardly Perkin at the approach of the engagement, quickly betrayed the meanneſs of his birth. Sudden terror ſeized him, he deſerted his followers, and fled to a place of refuge.

The king drew him from thence, upon a promiſe of ſparing his life, and having made him publicly acknowlege his impoſture, ſhut him up in the tower of London, where he remained ſeveral years ſtill poſſeſſed with the ſpirit of intrigue, which did not forſake him even in a priſon. He at length finiſhed his career as thoſe of the ſame ſtamp.

Henry now more reſpected than ever, on account of the wiſdom he had diſplayed in this troubleſome affair, ſtruck a deciſive blow for the ſecurity of his family, by ſhedding the blood of the earl of Warwick.

This was the grandſon of that hero who determined the fate of ſo many kings, and the laſt branch of the Plantagenets. The young prince was made a victim to the cruel policy of Ferdinand of Spain, who had given his daughter Catherine to Arthur prince of Wales, but on condition of this ſacrifice. An union ſtained with ſuch precious blood, did not prove happy; death quickly ſeparated Arthur from his conſort. She was married to the ſecond ſon of Henry, and this marriage, as we ſhall ſee in the ſequel, became the ſource of troubles and misfortunes.

Henry VIII, aſcended the throne of his father with the qualities of a hero. He ſaw the ſouthern parts of Europe in flames, through the hatred of Julius II, Lewis XII, Maximilian and Ferdinand.

They

They all courted his alliance, and looked upon him as the arbiter of their fortune. The deſire of gaining the hearts of his ſubjects; the fear of having too powerful a neighbour; the connection his marriage gave him with the houſe of Auſtria; the ambition he had to make war in perſon, and diſplay his talents in the face of Europe, all conſpired to determine the young monarch in favour of the emperor. He croſſed over into Flanders, took Terouanne, won the battle of the Spurs at Guinegate, and gave the moſt deciſive advantages to the ſide he had embraced. But the ſelfiſh diſpoſition of Maximilian having diſguſted him with the confederacy, he ſuddenly broke from his allies, made a peace with Lewis XII, and cemented this alliance by marrying his ſiſter to the French monarch. He continued the ſame union with the ſucceſſor of Lewis, and the two nations ſeemed to have forgot the quarrels that had laſted for ſo many centuries.

While Italy was convulſed from one extremity to the other; while France conſumed herſelf in frivolous and bloody projects; and while England reſted after the violent ſtorms, with which ſhe had been agitated for ſo many ages Spain, roſe to the higheſt pitch of glory by the moſt ſplendid undertaking. Chriſtopher Columbus, a Genoeſe, of a family illuſtrious in the art of navigation, with a ſettled paſſion for great deſigns, had all his life the application neceſſary for their accompliſhment. He was an able geographer, a learned aſtronomer, a laborious mariner, an excellent pilot, an extenſive genius, and a man of firmneſs and reſolution, whom no labours could diſcourage, no dangers ter-

riſy. He was equally well qualified to form a great plan, to execute it with judgment, and to ſtruggle with the obſtacles which ignorance and envy generally raiſe againſt ſublime undertakings.

The example of the Portugueze, whoſe bold attempts were the admiration of all Europe, kindled a noble emulation in the breaſt of Columbus, and inſpired him with the idea of ſurpaſſing thoſe navagators, by purſuing a courſe of a much more daring nature. A prejudice that was almoſt coeval with the world, perſuaded people that the earth had but one habitable hemiſphere, imagination countenanced this error, no perſon could conceive the poſſibility of exiſting in the parts oppoſed to thoſe which we inhabit. The round figure of the globe ſeemed to make the road impaſſable; 'twas the general opinion, that men who ſhould arrive at thoſe regions, muſt have their heads inverted, and be carried by their own weight into the immenſe ſpaces of the heavens. Falſe ideas of religion conſpired to eſtabliſh this illuſion. To ſupport it, texts were quoted from ſcripture, the opinions of the moſt enlightened and venerable fathers of the church, the ſuffrages of theological doctors, the deciſions of the popes, and the oracles of the councils, who all conſidered the belief of antipodes as abſurd and ſinful.

Columbus ventured to ſoar above the terrors of ſuperſtition and tyranny of prejudice; he was perſuaded that the ſame power which attached bodies to the ſurface on this ſide, muſt retain them equally on the oppoſite hemiſphere: he thence

thence inferred that the other hemiſphere had, probably, places that were inhabited, or ſeas, at leaſt, that were navigable. According to the firſt ſuppoſition, what glory ſhould he not acquire by the diſcovery of a new world? By the ſecond, he would have the honour to teach mankind to ſail round the world, to ſhew them an ocean and climates to which they were entire ſtrangers; to lead his fellow citizens to the Eaſt Indies, by a road leſs difficult, and by that means, deprive Venice, the implacable enemy of his country, of all the ſources of her ſuperiority. The only difficulty, which he confeſſed was great, was the fear of launching into unknown ſeas, perhaps, full of rocks and quick-ſands, but certainly of immenſe extent. But what could he not attempt with the compaſs, the quadrant, and the moſt ardent paſſion for glory.

The project of Columbus, required ſupplies beyond the power of an individual, and eſpecially one who was indigent and but little known. He addreſſed himſelf to his country, who treated him as a viſionary. Charles VIII, refuſed to hear him. Henry VII, drove him out of his dominions. Emanuel of Portugal and his council endeavoured to make advantage of the ideas of the foreigner, and deprive him of the honour. At length, he had recourſe to Iſabella and Ferdinand, whoſe aſſiſtance he ſolicited for eight years. He, in vain, held out the moſt ſplendid and beſt founded expectations to the wiſeſt queen and moſt ſagacious king then in Europe; the council in which the clergy preſided, rejected ideas that ignorance could not reach.

Tired

Tired out by thoſe delays, and diſguſted with the many painful diſappointments inſeparable from the part of a ſuppliant, he was preparing to leave Spain, when two protectors ſtopped him. The biſhop Quintinaglia and the treaſurer of St. Ange, notwithſtanding the prejudices of the times, were ſtruck with the beauty of the deſign, and reſolved to ſpare no pains to promote its ſucceſs. The former was in great favour with the queen, and at length, by mere dint of ſolicitation, obtained her conſent to put the ſcheme of the Genoeſe in execution. The ſecond propoſed to advance the neceſſary ſums; and ſo far raiſed the emulation of Ferdinand, that he granted three ſmall ſhips. Columbus could ſcarce find a few deſperate adventurers who had courage to accompany him, and Spain looked upon them as raſh fools that were going to certain deſtruction.

They ſet ſail from Palos, a ſmall port that became famous by this expedition. They directed their courſe between the weſt and ſouth, and entered ſeas that never had been ſuppoſed to exiſt. They kept ſailing for ſix whole weeks, ſtruggling with winds and ſtorms, with the dread of rocks and ſands, with their eyes continually on the compaſs, and the ſound perpetually in their hands. The crew, in the midſt of a boundleſs ocean, reſumed all their prejudice and terrors. They looked upon their chief as a madman who was leading them to the extremity of the world, whence it would be impoſſible to return. They complained they were ſo many victims, whom that foreigner was going to ſacrifice to his folly.

Thoſe

Thoſe complaints were quickly ſucceeded by murmurs, and the greater part of the ſailors demanded, with an air of authority, to be carried back to Spain. A refuſal to comply with their deſires, incenſed the people, and the more moderate began to mutiny. A general rebellion enſued againſt the Genoeſe; they threatened to load him with irons, they even meditated to throw him over board, in caſe he perſiſted to oppoſe the univerſal wiſhes of the people. Columbus was tortured with the apprehenſions of being obliged to renounce his enterprize. He begged, he commanded, he threatened, he endeavoured to work upon ſome, by ſhewing them the everlaſting glory they were about to enjoy; to others he talked of the certain riches they ſhould acquire, and to all the ſhame and reproaches they ſhould meet, if they returned at this time. He reminded them of the oaths they had made to him, to their country, and to their ſovereigns. Having exhauſted all other reſources, he even ventured to promiſe them a ſpeedy ſight of land, and conſented to return if it did not appear within a few days.

Some equivocal ſigns had encouraged the expectations of this experienced navigator; but they only afforded conjectures, which left him a prey to doubts and anxiety. The next morning more evident tokens appeared to ſtrengthen his hopes. At length, indubitable evidence diſplayed the wiſhed-for object. He was at the main-top-maſt head, where, for ſome time, he had ſpent part of his nights, and deſcrying a light, he no longer entertained

tertained a doubt of his happineſs. He waited for the return of day with impatience; as ſoon as it began to appear, he called the companions of his voyage, and ſhewed them lands covered with ſhady woods. They imagined the country to be an iſland. Struck with wonder and aſtoniſhment, they threw themſelves at his feet, and bathed them with tears. They ſurrounded, as a divine being, the man, whom, the day before, they were about to puniſh as an impoſtor. They extolled his genius and knowlege to the ſkies, and ſaluted him as the creator of a new world. They ſaw, on the ſhore before them, thoſe antipodes, who had been ſo long treated as chimeras. Thoſe were ſavages naked, painted and beardleſs, who came towards the Spaniards, at firſt, through curioſity, but immediately fled for fear. Columbus took ſome of them, and continuing his courſe, among many other iſlands, he diſcovered Cuba, the extent and fertility of which he admired. Near it he met with another, to which he gave the name of *Hiſpaniola*, where he deſcried a crowd of inhabitants who ran to view him: moſt of them were adorned with plates of gold, and armed with javelins, ſpears, and other weapons. As he judged they intended to oppoſe his landing, he thought proper to terrify them by diſcharging the artillery. The people who imagined they heard the thunder of heaven, and ſaw its fires levelled at their heads, either fell to the ground or fled to the foreſts. Columbus then landed without any difficulty, and having taken ſome of their chiefs, diſpelled their fears by kind treatment and gave them to underſtand

ſtand, by ſigns, that he wiſhed to know the places where they found the metals with which they were adorned.

He followed them, dug up the mines, and found a prodigious quantity of gold. Delighted with the ſituation and riches of the place, he determined to plant a colony and build a ſmall town there. He gave the name of Hiſpaniola to the whole iſland, and that of Iſabella to the town he founded. In the mean while, a general fermentation was ſpread among the ſavages of the iſland: The people of ſome diſtricts, filled with reverential awe for ſtrangers, whom their knowlege and arts made them looked upon as demi-gods, were ſtrongly attached to the admiral; others, who conſidered the Spaniards in no other light but that of uſurpers, who were come to rob them of their country, raiſed powerful armies, and threatened the colony.

Columbus, who was a wiſe politician, and an able warrior, as well as an excellent navigator, protected his allies, and marched againſt the enemies; by diſperſing ſome, puniſhing others, and ſhewing mercy to the greateſt part, he won their hearts. Thus by a ſeaſonable application of ſeverity and lenity, he converted thoſe very troubles, which threatened to deſtroy the colony, to its advantage, and ſet ſail in order to carry the news of the world he had diſcovered. He now appeared on the ſeas, not as a ſimple mariner, but as an admiral, or rather conqueror, who carried back in his ſhips, men of a different ſpecies, products of another univerſe, and immenſe riches, the fruits and

proofs

proofs of his ſucceſs. Aſtoniſhed Europe heard thoſe wonders with enthuſiaſtic rapture. Envy and ſuperſtition were confounded, and changed into ſentiments of veneration. Portugal, who had diſdained his offers, received him in triumph, and was laviſh in her praiſes and admiration. Spain honoured him as one ſuperior to the reſt of mortals. Cities ſent their magiſtrates out to wait upon him, and the villages were deſerted by their inhabitants, who flew to meet him. Iſabella and Ferdinand placed him at their ſide in public ceremonies. They appointed him admiral of the Weſt, and perpetual vice-roy of all the countries he might diſcover; they honoured him with the moſt exhalted titles, and gave him arms, the quarters and device of which were expreſſive of his enterprize and diſcovery.

Columbus flew from the dignities and honours which were heaped upon him, in order to ſet out upon new expeditions. He imagined he had done nothing, and burned with impatience to make the tour of the world. He began with reviſiting his colony, which he found almoſt entirely deſtroyed. The companions of his firſt voyage took advantage of his abſence and harraſſed the ſavages. The thirſt of gold had carried them to the moſt inhuman exceſſes; thouſands of Indians were ſlaughtered, and the innocent Caſiques condemned to the moſt cruel torments. Deſpair armed thoſe unfortunate people, and they, at length, ventured to attack their conquerors; and numbers ſupplying the place of art, they drove the Spaniards from their city, and purſued the reſt of

the

the robbers, who fled to the mountains. The admiral repaired all thoſe misfortunes in a ſhort time. He checked the impetuoſity of the ſavages by force, he regained the friendſhip of their Caſiques by his virtues; he exerted a juſt ſeverity againſt thoſe who had oppreſſed the inhabitants, and ſent the moſt criminal back to Spain. After reſtoring peace to the whole iſland, and re-eſtabliſhing the new colony, he bent his thoughts entirely upon proſecuting his diſcoveries. He found the Antilles; penetrated as far as the gulph of Mexico; viſited all the coaſt that extends from Panama to the mouth of Oronoko, took a view of that river, and gave thoſe countries names which they ſtill retain.

He then returned to Hiſpaniola, with the honour of having added the diſcovery of the continent, to that of the iſlands; he found the place in a dreadful fermentation. His brother, whom he had left in his place, became obnoxious to a moſt barbarous jealouſy, which, even the preſence of Columbus could not extinguiſh. A numerous faction derided his authority, attacked its foundation, and carried the moſt atrocious accuſations againſt him, before the council of Ferdinand.

Calumny found a ſupport in Europe. Envy, that had been ſuppreſſed at firſt, ſoon reared its baneful head again, and attacked Columbus with virulence. A powerful biſhop was at the head of his enemies, and was reſolved to deſtroy him.

Courts ſwarm with thoſe worthleſs animals, who have no other merit but the ſupple and deſpicable merit of intrigue. As they are incapable

of

of any good or virtuous action themſelves, they are the natural enemies of thoſe who have reſolution to perform them; they are ever ready to patronize the man of mediocrity who flatters them, in order to employ him againſt merit and capacity, which they hate.

Fonseca was one of thoſe deteſtable beings. He had the art to creep into the confidence of the queen, whom exceſs of zeal made too eaſily give credit to the miniſters of the altar. Having obſtructed the project of the Genoeſe with all his might, he ſaw with the moſt poignant vexation, the ſucceſs of an expedition which his ignorance had treated as a mere chimera. Tortured with the internal conviction of the ſuperiority of Columbus, he ſought every method to deſtroy his happineſs, in order to puniſh him for this advantage. He exulted to find an opportunity in the complaint made by the robbers whom the admiral had driven from the colony, took upon him to lay their impoſtures at the foot of the throne, and encouraged all the enemies whom jealouſy had raiſed againſt that great man. They were loud in their murmurs as they were ſure to find favour in the council. They repreſented Columbus as a mercileſs governor, whoſe cruelty obſtructed the progreſs of diſcoveries; they made him appear in the light of a tyrant who oppreſſed the Indians, and charged him with the very crimes which he had oppoſed. They attacked him in the moſt tender part, by denying him the glory of his labours; ſtories were circulated at court, and among the people, tending to rob him of the honour of his diſcoveries. One while it was

ſuppoſed

ſuppoſed that he had been inſtructed by certain mariners, whoſe journals he had copied. At other times, the moſt remote antiquity was ranſacked for equivocal teſtimonies to prove, that the new world had been found out long before. Certain adventurers fell into the road which Columbus had opened, and pretended to a ſhare in his glory.

AMERICUS VESPUCIUS, a Florentine, whoſe talents did not riſe beyond mediocrity, advanced as far as the continent that had been already diſcovered by the Genoeſe, and thence returning to Europe, had the aſſurance to boaſt that he had firſt touched there. Fonſeca countenanced the falſhood; envy repeated it from mouth to mouth; and unjuſt Europe, by giving the name of America to the new hemiſphere, beſtowed on an obſcure impoſtor an honour that might have flattered the greateſt monarch. The ungrateful Ferdinand, who ſought a pretext for leſſening the value of a ſervice that was ſuperior to all recompence, ſecretly ſupported Fonſeca: Iſabella, ſurrounded by the enemies of the admiral, ſuffered herſelf to be impoſed upon, and ſigned the order for his diſgrace. A commiſſary who was ſent to the iſland of Hiſpaniola to try Columbus, condemned him to death; but not daring to ſtrike ſo illuſtrious a victim, he ſent him to Spain loaded with irons. It was with infinite difficulty he made his innocence appear, and confounded thoſe malignant enemies who traduced him to the queen. He loſt his dignity of viceroy; that of admiral

was left only becauſe he was judged neceſſary for other toils. Incapable of being diſpirited, he embarked again for the diſcovery of new countries. Envy, that perſecuted him in Europe, purſued him to America. He was refuſed admittance into the iſland of Hiſpaniola, and, after a voyage full of diſappointments, was forced to caſt anchor at a ſmall iſland, where he remained a whole year, reduced to the moſt ſevere extremities. His courage ſupported him in the midſt of ſo many diſtreſſes, and his capacity enabled him to ſave the lives of the companions of his misfortunes.

At his return to Spain he experienced new trials and afflictions. For ever envied, for ever perſecuted, after being an object of the ingratitude of men and the injuſtice of courts, he at length terminated in anxiety and trouble, a life, of which every moment had been devoted to enlarge the boundaries of the human mind. Death ſilenced calumny, and did juſtice to his merit and capacity. The ſame funeral honours were paid him as to kings, ſcarce one of whom ever deſerved them ſo well. His body was carried to the new world, and the chains with which he had been bound. Thoſe chains he never parted with during the reſt of his life. At his death he left orders to have them buried with him.

The Spaniards, attracted by the riches which their countrymen brought from America, followed the traces of the Genoeſe in crowds, and formed new colonies. Velaſco eſtabliſhed a conſiderable one in the iſland of Cuba. Nicueſſa ſettled on the continent,

continent, near the borders of the Gulph of Darien. Pedrarias laid the foundation of Panama, a city that is ſince become famous. Bovadilla viſited Florida, but Balbas infinitely more reſolute, ſailed towards the ſouth pole, and coaſted along thoſe immenſe ſhores of South America, which extend as far as the polar circles. After diſcovering the paſſage of that expanded ſea which ſeparates America from Aſia, he penetrated into the pacific ocean, and pointed out the way to ſail round the world.

The glory of ſo many bold diſcoveries was tarniſhed by the cruelties committed by thoſe mariners. Whole iſlands were depopulated by the barbarity of the conquerors; they were not content with putting the Indians to death; they invented the moſt dreadful tortures to deſtroy them; rank, age, or ſex excited no compaſſion in the breaſts of thoſe unfeeling barbarians. The parts of America that had been diſcovered, exhibited, in a little time, nothing but deſerts or miſerable inhabitants. In the midſt of ſuch horrid ſcenes, humanity found one generous man who undertook her defence. Bartholomew de Laſcaſas is one of thoſe names that muſt be dear to every feeling heart. This benevolent and virtuous monk expoſtulated, intreated, and wept, to wreſt the murderous ſword out of the hands of his countrymen; he was continually ſailing from one world to the other, in order to make the voice of compaſſion be heard in both. He had the courage to carry the ſighs and groans of the wretched victims of Spaniſh avarice to the foot of the throne, regard-

leſs of the hatred of the great, or the authority of the miniſters, he braved every danger, in order to get an audience of Ferdinand and Iſabella. His fortune, his friends and his pen, were employed for the ſame generous purpoſes.

The deſcription, this orator of humanity ventured to publiſh, of the tyranny with which the firſt perſonages of the ſtate oppreſſed the harmleſs ſavages, is ſtill read with emotions of compaſſion and horror. His humane ſentiments are depicted in every line, and the tender feelings of his heart are ſometimes expreſſed in a ſtyle of eloquence beyond the abilities nature ſeemed to have allowed him.

We can never ſufficiently wonder at the neglect of the church of Rome, in not honouring on their altars, the name of this illuſtrious eccleſiaſtic, who ſpent all his life in the practice of the moſt neceſſary and moſt reſpectable of all virtues. The cries of Laſcaſas, with difficulty, extorted a few edicts which tyranny derided. The Indians found no redreſs, but they enjoyed the pleaſure of vengeance. Their tyrants ſatiated with their blood, turned their arms againſt each other; they carried on a bloody war together, and deſtroyed one another with mutual rage and fury. They all periſhed by the ſword, died on a ſcaffold, or terminated their iniquitous lives in the waves.

While thoſe emigrations and the bloody ſcenes of the conquerors of America drained Spain of her inhabitants, another ſource of depopulation aroſe from ſuperſtition. The clergy were continually uneaſy to ſee the Moors of Granada and the people

of

of the neighbouring mountains enjoying, on the faith of treaties, the free exercise of their worship. The heads of this body, spurred on by Mendoza, archbishop of Toledo and the celebrated Ximenes, pressed the court to deprive the conquered nation of the privileges that had been left them. The remorse, natural to a virtuous soul, restrained Isabella, until the enemies of the Moors contrived an expedient to remove her scruples. They called a national council, where this question was proposed, whether christians were obliged to keep the faith and promises given to infidels. Some generous men, in vain, took the part of justice; the majority decided the question against the mussulmen. The archbishop, with the decree in his hand, went to implore the queen, and, by earnest pressing solicitations, extorted an edict, which left the Arabs no other alternative, but either to quit the country or renounce the religion of their ancestors. They, in vain, urged the solemnity of the treaty, the oaths of Isabella, and the promises of Frdinand.

Their complaints were treated as seditious, and the most legal remonstrances that ever had been made were taxed with treason. No other choice was given to the son of their king, but baptism or perpetual imprisonment. Despair armed the hands of those unfortunate people, they descended from their mountains in crowds, and a general insurrection threatened the loss of all those provinces. Surprised by the activity of Ferdinand, and overpowered by his abilities and the courage of his troops, they were forced to submit to the will of the conqueror. Part of them were executed or

fled to Afric, the reſt embraced, with horror, a religion which their hearts deteſted. At the ſame time Mendoza and Ximenes ſet up the tribunal of the inquiſition. Swarms of ſpies were employed to watch the motions of thoſe proſelytes of violence; and on the ſlighteſt appearance of a return to their ancient worſhip, or on the teſtimony of the meaneſt informer, the new chriſtians were dragged to priſon and burned at a ſtake.

Thousands of Arabs periſhed in the flames kindled by thoſe two men, whoſe inhuman tyranny doomed to the fire, even thoſe humane perſons who ventured to pity their victims.

In the mean time, the genius of Ferdinand continued to aggrandize the monarchy. We have ſeen him recover Rouſillon and Cerdaigne by his intrigues, and ſubject the kingdom of Naples by art and cunning. Thus, in both hemiſpheres, the arms of Spain were triumphant, and raiſed the glorious adminiſtration of both conſorts to the higheſt pitch. But in the midſt of all this proſperity, an accident happened that poiſoned all the joys of thoſe powerful monarchs. An only ſon, the heir of all their extenſive poſſeſſions, was taken off in the flower of his age. Three daughters they had were ſo many examples of misfortune. Iſabella, who was married to the king of Portugal, died very young, and the ſon of that princeſs, who was to enjoy all the kingdoms of Spain, quickly followed her to the tomb. Jane, the wife of Philip of Auſtria, loſt her ſenſes. Catherine was ſcarce wedded to Arthur, the heir of the Britiſh monarchy, when ſhe loſt her conſort, and contracted a

ſecond

ſecond marriage with the brother of that prince, which became the ſource of her misfortunes. They found ſome conſolation after ſo many afflictions, in the birth of Charles and Ferdinand, the children of Philip, who were both deſtined one day to wear the imperial crown. Iſabella did not long ſurvive this joyful event.

That immortal princeſs had a generous ſoul and exalted genius. She was accuſed of jealouſy, which was nothing but the pure effect of virtue, and of pride that was no more than the noble conſciouſneſs of the dignity of her rank. She merited cenſure, however, on account of her blind ſuperſtition that armed her, otherwiſe, benevolent hands, with the ſword which falſe zeal employed to ſacrifice its victims.

The death of Iſabella, gave riſe to the moſt violent troubles in Spain. Ferdinand, with the laſt will of the queen in his hand, demanded the regency of Caſtile. Philip, his ſon-in-law, claimed the adminiſtration, in right of his wife: Jane to whom the throne belonged, inclined ſometimes to favour her huſband, whom ſhe, in a manner, adored; at other times, ſhe oppoſed him from juſt motives of jealouſy, and ſo declared, alternately, for her conſort and father. The arrival of Philip determined the fortune of the competitors. The people, tired of the imperious diſpoſition of Ferdinand, joyfully embraced the opportunity of ſhaking off the yoke, and received the Auſtrian prince with tranſports. A happy figure and affable diſpoſition, gained Philip the hearts of his new ſubjects. Ferdinand was ſent back to his

own dominions, and loſt all influence in Caſtile, where Philip reigned with abſolute authority. The haughty prince of Arragon, incenſed at the behaviour of his ſon-in-law, formed a ſcheme to deprive him of the inheritance of Iſabella.

The daughter of Henry IV was ſtill living in a cloiſter at Coimbra, where ſhe had buried her pretenſions. Ferdinand propoſed to her to annul thoſe vows which violence had dictated, then marry her, deſtroy the acts that caſt a ſtain upon her birth, form a powerful party and replace her on the throne of which he had diſpoſſeſſed her. This deſign, which the king of Portugal oppoſed, and the exalted ſpirit of Jane entirely ruined, was ſucceeded by another. We have ſeen the outrage he committed againſt Lewis XII; he now ſtudied to regain the confidence of that prince, and to form the ſtricteſt alliance with him.

Lewis, who had been hitherto the friend of Philip, and was grown jealous of his extraordinary power, ſeconded the ſchemes of a prince who had ſo often deceived him. Thus the apparent intereſts of France coinciding with the private reſentment of Ferdinand, he married the niece of Francis, with whom he entered into the moſt friendly engagements. In the mean time, Philip, who was at firſt the idol of Caſtile, ſoon drew on himſelf the contempt of the people. They perceived that, notwithſtanding his amiable qualities, he was a weak prince, and full of levity; that he neglected the buſineſs of the nation, thought of nothing but pleaſure, and was entirely governed by foreigners, who ſquandered the public money, and plundered

the

the property of individuals. They wiſhed for the manly and active ſpirit of Ferdinand, who raiſed the glory of the monarchy, and placed it in ſo flouriſhing a ſituation. The nobles, provoked at the inſults offered to them by the Flandricans, broke out into murmurs and complaints, and the whole nation was ripe for a revolt, when death ſnatched away the prince in the flower of his age. A widow, who was lunatic, and two tender infants, being unfit to govern, two ſovereigns claimed the regency of Caſtile; the powers of both were nearly equal, but their capacities widely different.

The inconſtant and weak Maximilian, being grandfather on the paternal ſide of the prince of Aſturias, ſeemed to have a more legitimate title. Ferdinand, who was the maternal grandfather, had in his favour the vicinity of his dominions, the intereſt of Ximenes, then archbiſhop of Toledo, and the general eſteem of the nation. The unanimous wiſhes of the people declared for the prince of Arragon, and the national aſſembly conferred the regency on him, during the minority of Charles, to whom they gave the title of king.

Thus Europe, who looked upon this prince as undone, ſaw him more powerful and abſolute than ever, with the two fineſt kingdoms of Spain, and the only throne in Italy under his obedience. The ableſt captains of the age, who were formed under himſelf, commanded his armies. The great Gonzalva and Anthony de Leva, drove the French a third time out of Naples. Raimond of Cordonna,, compelled the Venetians to make ſubmiſ-

ſion

ſion to his ſovereign; the duke of Alva rapidly ſubjected Navarre to his authority, Peter of Navarre, ſeconding the zeal of Ximenes, carried the forces of Caſtile againſt Afric, ſeized upon Oran, and alarmed the very capital of the empire of Morocco, The Spaniſh navigators, at the ſame time, continued to diſcover immenſe countries in the new world, whence they returned laden with treaſures. In the midſt of all this proſperity, Ferdinand was carried off by a conſumption; and thus died one of the greateſt princes that ever exiſted. He was the origin of the glory to which Spain ſoon after attained, and no ſovereign was ſo well ſkilled in the art of governing, ſince the days of Philip of Macedon. He reſembled that ancient prince in almoſt every thing, he had his capacity and vices, and only wanted his polite and engaging manners.

EMPIRE.

FRANCE, ITALY, SPAIN, AND ENGLAND, FROM 1576.

CHARLES of Auſtria, at the age of ſixteen, received the news of ſo ſplendid a ſucceſſion in Flanders. He added to the poſſeſſions of his grandfather, the ſeventeen provinces in the Low Countries, with Franche-Comte. Beſides, he had the near expectation of the inheritance of the houſe of Auſtria; ſo that he was, indiſputably, the moſt powerful prince in Europe. Francis I was the only one who could enter into any competition with him. He had lately added the dutchy of Milan to the kingdom of his predeceſſors, and

the

the laurels of Marignan were preſent to the eyes of all Europe. The fate of this part of the world ſeemed to depend on thoſe two powers, and from the friendſhip or enmity of two young princes, full of ambition, peace and calm, or ſtorms were to be expected. Two princes ſeemed deſtined to hold the balance between Charles and Francis. The king of England was, after them, the moſt conſiderable monarch in Chriſtendom. The pope was inveſted with a dignity which religion made the firſt in the univerſe. Henry had already diſtinguiſhed himſelf by his victories. The policy and talents of Leo were famous throughout the Weſt.

Some urgent affairs detained Charles in the Low Countries, ſo that he could not ſet out immediately for Spain. Ximenes held the reins of government, during his abſence; deſcended from obſcure parents, brought up in all the hardſhips inſeparable from misfortune, well inſtructed in the ſtudy of divinity, Ximenes was forced, by the ſeverity of fortune, to throw himſelf into a cloiſter, where he diſtinguiſhed himſelf by his zeal, his virtues and inflexibility of temper, which all the circumſtances of his life contributed to harden. Being called to the court by Iſabella, he had the direction of the conſcience of that princeſs, and gained admiration by his learning and the auſterity of his manners. The more he appeared to contemn honours, the more he was thought to deſerve them: he was at length raiſed to the dignity of archbiſhop of Toledo. Placed in a rank that had nothing ſuperior but the throne, he

he displayed all his talents, and at the same time, the severity which accompanied them. His zeal was persecution, his hatred to error, cruel and sanguinary. Crimes found in him an inexorable avenger.; as he allowed no weakness in himself, he shewed no mercy to that of others. But in the mean time his greatness of soul prompted him to a variety of worthy actions: the same hand, that plunged the dagger into the bosom of infidels, protected the weak, relieved the wants of the poor, dried up the tears of the unfortunate, directed immortal productions, adorned Toledo with magnificent and useful structures, and liberally poured out gold to form establishments, where he educated, with honour, the daughters of those very nobles whose licentiousness he chastised. Having become the delegate of the supreme authority, at the death of Philip of Austria, his conduct was firm and terrible, and raised admiration while it excited hatred.

After quitting the administration, to give it up to Ferdinand, he undertook a war at his own expence, maintained troops, entered Africa at the head of his army, gave battle there, overcame the Moors, and took the important city of Oran for his country and sovereign. The prince, who, without any love, had always esteemed him, appointed him regent, during the absence of his grandson. At eighty years of age, Ximenes resumed the reins of government of the most extensive kindom in Europe, and displayed a vigour and policy that subjected every thing to his obedience. He struck terror into the great, who disputed

puted his authority; the governors of the provinces attempted to ſhake off the yoke, he kept them to their duty; he let looſe the ſeverity of the laws againſt the firſt heads of the ſtate; he put a ſtop to the oppreſſions committed by the favourites of the prince; he made a jeſt of the weak Adrian, his colleague; he leſſened the taxes and filled the public treaſury; he eſtabliſhed a military body which ſecured tranquility without expence to the ſovereign; he drove the French from the frontiers, preſerved Navarre to his maſter, and gained opulent cities for him in Africa; he had great capacity and reſolution, was an eccleſiaſtic of irreproachable manners, and a miniſter of ſtate of the pureſt integrity, without being a great man. We are not to honour with that name a prieſt, who gave orders to make a deſert of Navarre, if it could not be preſerved, who, with the ſacred ſword in his hand, dragged the unfortunate muſſulmen to the foot of the altar, baniſhed ſome, ſtripped others of their poſſeſſions, and threw the wretched people into the flames, for no other crime, but an inclination that privately led them to the religion in which they were born.

CHARLES was buſy in reſtoring peace to Europe, in order to promote his own views. The treaty of Noyon, which ſeemed to eſtabliſh an everlaſting union between him and France, diſarmed at the ſame time both Maximilian and Henry. Being thus free from all uneaſineſs, with reſpect to the dominions he inherited from his father, he made a journey to Spain, in order to take poſſeſſion of the extenſive territories left him by his uncle on

the

the maternal ſide. He obliged the people to give him the authority his mother was intitled to by the laws, but which the good of the ſtate made them refuſe to a woman inſane. An important error diſturbed the beginning of his reign. Educated in the Low Countries, accuſtomed to the manners of the inhabitants of thoſe places, with a Flemiſh governor and preceptor about him, the young monarch was entirely ruled by them, and heaped favours on ſtrangers which they abuſed. The Spaniſh pride broke out in dangerous murmurs, which being imprudently deſpiſed, produced an open rebellion. Charles already faithful to the maxims of his grandfather Ferdinand, pacified thoſe diſturbances by promiſes which he never intended to perform, and in the mean time received an important piece of news.

The ſucceſſion of Auſtria became vacant by the death of Maximilian. Concerned in all the troubles in Europe, the firſt to occaſion as well as to abandon them; the friend and enemy of France, of Venice, of the Popes and the Swiſs by turns; continually a ſubordinate actor with the moſt exalted title, indigent with extenſive poſſeſſions, a weak man with an active diſpoſition, and deſpiſed, notwithſtanding he had talents and virtues, Maximilian at length cloſed his extravagant career with the project ſtill more extravagant of making himſelf coadjutor to Leo. The empire which he left vacant, received at the latter end of his reign, the principles of the greateſt diſturbance and confuſion. Germany was menaced with a flame that was ſhortly to ſpread itſelf all over Europe. The

friar

friar Luther had revived the opinions of Wicliff; he had attacked the ſacraments, the hierarchy, the vows made by the religious orders, the juriſdiction and riches of the clergy, and publickly ſeparated from the authority of the pontiffs. Saxony applauded the ſpirit and reſolution of her orator, and the elector Frederic, who was revered as one of the wiſeſt princes of the times, openly declared himſelf the protector of the new doctrine. The threats of the clergy, and the thunders levelled at the head of the daring Luther, ſerved only to raiſe the credit of his doctrine. It ſpread through Germany; and that great body ſaw her members divided by diſputes concerning religion. 'Twas in thoſe difficult circumſtances the electors aſſembled to deliberate on the choice of a head; two candidates ſolicited their votes. Francis expatiated on his power, his contiguous ſituation, the victories that had already raiſed his reputation, and particularly that of Marignan, where his valour had triumphed over the moſt formidable warriors in Europe. Charles of Spain, with poſſeſſions ſtill more conſiderable, urged the pretenſions he derived from his family, who had ſo long held the imperial ſceptre, and repreſented himſelf as the natural protector of Germany againſt the Turks, on account of the ſituation of thoſe dominions that were left him by Maximilian. This argument and a view of the ſeveral conſiderable manors lately united to the crown of France, which made the princes of Germany apprehend a ſimilar fate, pleading againſt Francis, the majority of the ſuffrages was in favour of Charles. The haughty monarch of France was incenſed at the

preference

preference given to his rival. He burned with impatience to puniſh him for his ſucceſs, and in order to ſecure the means of revenge, he invited Henry to an interview, by which he was in hopes of perſuading that prince to take part in his quarrel. The new emperor, ſenſible of the intentions of his enemy, went to England, advanced as far as Canterbury, with a deſign to prevent, by this extraordinary proceeding, the meeting of thoſe two kings. He there employed every argument to gain the friendſhip of Henry, and made uſe of the moſt infallible expedient. Wolſey, the ſon of a butcher, who was born with talents, ſome capacity and much cunning, had the art to overleap the wide interval that his birth had placed between him and the court. By his pliancy and intrigues he approached the throne; attracted notice, and made a rapid progreſs in the eſteem of the ſovereign, and was ſoon loaded with favours. He was made archbiſhop of York, adorned with the purple, the confidant of the prince, the principle delegate of his authority; a voluptuous prieſt; an oſtentatious prelate, but an able miniſter, and the moſt ſupple courtier that ever exiſted. He at length obtained a boundleſs aſcendant over the mind of his maſter, and deſpotically governed the people who deteſted him. Charles bent all his thoughts to gain this miniſter. He flattered his vanity with the moſt extraordinary reſpect and condeſcenſion, he tempted his ambition with a view of the triple crown which he did not heſitate to promiſe him; and thus ſecured the friendſhip of the cardinal, whoſe influence, he was perſuaded,

would

would diſappoint the meaſures of the French; he croſſed over into Germany and was crowned. The interview of the two kings terminating agreeable to the deſires of Charles, Francis was obliged to ſtruggle with his own forces alone againſt the entire power of Auſtria. He did not, however, loſe all hopes: the emperor, who was obliged to keep fair with the pope, had condemned Luther, and by this proceeding he gained the enmity of the princes of Germany who favoured that ſectary. He committed Spain to the authority of his preceptor Adrian, and that weak and religious prelate ſaw the kingdom in arms againſt him. The people made a jeſt of his authority, and indulged themſelves in all the exceſſes of licentiouſneſs and rebellion. Francis, in hopes of drawing ſome advantage from the confuſion in thoſe two ſtates, privately perſuaded the duke of Bouillon to attack the emperor on the ſide of Flanders, while he diſpatched Lautrec to Navarre, in order to reſtore that kingdom to John D'Albret.

Charles, ſenſible that enemies ſo weak would never have attempted to oppoſe him, unleſs they were privately aſſiſted by ſome powerful hand, made uſe of expedients, on his ſide, to turn the ſtorm againſt the head of his rival. He pacified Spain by conceſſions, reſtrained the Lutherans by promiſes, cultivated the friendſhip of Wolſey more than ever, and with Leo gained over the powers of Italy. He marched in perſon againſt the duke who had inſulted him; made himſelf maſter of his territories in a few days, entered France, took the caſtle of Navarre, and ſent

Naſſau to beſiege Mezieres: Francis advanced at the ſame time againſt his rival, and the two princes, now met for the firſt time, were ready to determine their diſputes by a bloody battle. Henry, ambitious of the glory of reſtoring peace to Europe, offered his mediation, and was on the point of ſucceeding, when the flatterers of Francis ſubverted all his meaſures. Thus diſcord was renewed with more violence than ever, and the enmity of thoſe two great powers involved the whole weſtern world in confuſion.

This was the beginning of the tedious and bloody conteſt that proved ſo fatal to France and the ſource of the proſperity of Auſtria. Francis and Charles ſeemed at firſt view an equal match for each other. The dominions of Charles were more extenſive, thoſe of France were more connected, his ſubjects more ſubmiſſive, and his nobles better ſoldiers. Charles had already given proofs of ſuperior wiſdom and policy. Francis was diſtinguiſhed on account of exalted valour. They both had numerous armies, well diſciplined, inured to war, and commanded by great generals. Francis had Lautrec, Bayard, and Bourbon, on whom he had lately confered the dignity of conſtable. Charles had Proſper Columna, Piſcairo, Lannoi, and Anthony de Leva, whoſe valiant behaviour had raiſed him, from the rank of a private ſoldier, to the higheſt military honours.

Italy became the firſt theatre whereon the armies of the two rivals ſignalized their courage. A powerful league, formed by Charles, intereſted itſelf in favour of Sforca, and ſent Columna to reinſtate

inſtate that prince in the ſovereignty of his anceſtors. Lautrec, who was no ways a match for the general he had to encounter, was totally defeated, and his maſter loſt one half of the Milaneſe. The death of Leo gave ſome hopes to Francis, and ſerved only to aggravate his loſſes. The politic Charles, regardleſs of the promiſes made to Wolſey, found means to have the election determined in favour of his preceptor; and the new pope, who ſtill preſerved the name of Adrian, became a ſlave to the will of his pupil. Lautrec in vain appeared at the head of the Swiſs, in order to reinſtate matters; the avarice of the king's mother, who retained the money deſtined for the troops, gave great diſſatisfaction to the army, and occaſioned new misfortunes. Columna made his advantage of thoſe circumſtances, and completed the revolution by the bloody battle of Bicoque. The Milaneſe was loſt, and Genoa, ever ready to ſhift with fortune, ſubmitted to a new yoke.

The reſentment of Wolſey in vain gave freſh hopes to Francis. Charles was artful enough to pacify the ambitious cardinal by renewing his flattery, and ſhewing him once more a proſpect of the tiara. The miniſter more attached than ever to the emperor, ſtrengthened the ties of friendſhip between him and Henry, and England openly declared againſt France. Venice, who had been ſo faithful an ally to that crown, was ſeduced by ſimilar arts.

The conſtable of Bourbon was the only man capable of reſtoring ſucceſs to France; but Louiſa of Savoy, whoſe hand he had rejected, prevailed

upon her ſon to load him with indignities, and forced that able commander to turn againſt his country. A ſecret conſpiracy was formed by the intrigues of that prince, and France was on the point of being diſmembered. The crime however was diſcovered, but in the preſervation of the ſtate Bourbon was loſt, who devoted his talents and valour to the enemy of his maſter. A chain of misfortunes was the conſequence of the imprudence of the court. Boniwet, by not following the advice of Bayard, was driven from the Milaneſe, and France deprived of that illuſtrious knight. Henry ravaged Picardy, and advanced within twenty leagues of the capital. Bourbon, who was inflamed with the deſires of revenge, penetrated with Piſcairo into the heart of Provence; laid ſiege to Marſeilles, and threatened to raiſe an inſurrection in the ſouthern provinces. But Francis, who had ſlumbered in proſperity, was now rouzed at the view of danger. He made head on every ſide; drove out Bourbon; forced the Engliſh to return to their iſland; and finding himſelf in a condition to defend his frontiers, he reſumed the deſign of carrying the ſeat of war into Italy.

Fortune now ſeemed to favour the monarch. He was at the head of a flouriſhing army, before which every thing gave way: his rivals fled as he advanced, and he obliged Anthony of Leva to ſhut himſelf up in Pavia. On this occaſion were ſhewn all the abilities of the Spaniſh general, who immortalized himſelf by the defence he made; and the great imprudence of the king,

who

who ſuffered himſelf to be dazzled by his ſucceſs. Imagining that he had nothing farther to apprehend, he divided his forces, ſent a thouſand men towards Naples, four thouſand to Genoa, and diſdained to fortify his entrenchments. While he was carrying on the ſiege of Pavia, Bourbon, who had been to Germany in order to levy recruits, paſſed the Alps, entered Lombardy and advanced againſt his king. Lannoi joined him, and Piſcairo was at the heels of thoſe two commanders. The council in vain, ſhewed Francis the danger of quitting his entrenchments, as well as the facility of gradually deſtroying the enemy, who was in want of proviſions, and whoſe troops were ready to mutiny on account of not receiving their pay. The monarch conſulting only his own courage, thought it beneath him to wait for the ſurrender of the Spaniards, and marched againſt Bourbon. The two armies met on the plains contiguous toPavia, where they fought that battle which did ſo much honour to the courge of the king, ſo little to his prudence, and became ſo deſtructive to France. The activity and ardour of the monarch, who behaved like a hero wherever the danger appeared moſt preſſing, gave way to the abilities of the three generals he had to encounter. The French were broken on all ſides, and the monarch, while he was fighting like a common ſoldier all covered with duſt and blood, became a captive to his ſubject. The king of Navarre experienced the like fate, and one half of the French nobility were either made priſoners or ſlain in the field.

All Europe was alarmed at this news. The enmity againſt Francis now gave way to the fears ariſing from the power of the conqueror. The wiſe Venetians were the firſt who perceived the dangers that threatened the general liberty. Medicis who, under the name of Clement VII, had ſucceeded Adrian, trembled at his ſituation, ſurrounded as he was by the dominions of the Emperor. Wolſey having been duped a ſecond time, to the intereſt of policy, united the ardour of reſentment, and repreſented Charles as a man of unbounded ambition, who, having now no longer any check to his extravagant purſuits, would cruſh his very allies and enſlave Europe. In the ſpace of a few months, a league, compoſed of all the powers of Italy, conſpired in favour of the captive. The confederacy was ſupported by all the forces of England. Charles was confounded; and Francis, after a year of ſevere captivity, recovered his liberty on very hard conditions. He renounced all homage for Artois and Flanders; he gave up his pretentions to the Milaneſe, and promiſed to reſign Burgundy. He was alſo obliged to give his two ſons as hoſtages for the performance of thoſe articles; but the moment he was releaſed, he proteſted againſt thoſe promiſes that were extorted by violence, demanded back his ſons, and invited all Europe to ſecond his deſigns. Henry declared openly for him, Clement intereſted Italy in his cauſe, and Sforca himſelf, whom the emperor had reinſtated, turned againſt his benefactor, whoſe power appeared too formidable. Francis was powerfully aſſiſted by

by ſea; Doria, the Genoeſe, declared for him; and that admiral who was the firſt of the age, made the French flag terrible in the Mediterranean.

The Lutherans taking advantage of the embarraſſed ſituation of the emperor, threatened to take up arms, while the malcontents in Spain broke out with more violence than ever. Charles did not loſe himſelf in the midſt of ſo many ſtorms. He exerted a firmneſs and reſolution that kept his ſubjects in awe; he appeaſed Germany by artful meaſures; he publiſhed a thundering decree againſt Sforca, and ſecretly gained over the duke of Urbin, general of the confederates, to his intereſt. His generals ſeconded his meaſures with no leſs capacity than zeal. Lanner preſerved Naples when it was on the point of being loſt; Anthony de Leva drove out Sforca, and made himſelf maſter of the Milaneſe. Bourbon, at the head of a body of adventurers, compoſed of all nations, by whom he was adored, on account of the indulgence he ſhewed to their licentious proceedings, over-ran, ravaged, and plundered the north of Italy, paid the troops with the booty he gained in the territories of Venice, of the Pope and Florence; then by an unexpected motion, he marched towards Rome, and ſuddenly appeared before the walls of that city. He was killed as he was placing a ladder, in order to have the honour of mounting firſt. His ſoldiers ſeverely revenged his death. They entered the city ſword in hand, deluged the ſtreets with blood, plundered the churches, ſet fire to

the public edifices, and forced Clement to fly for ſhelter to the caſtle of St. Angelo. Rome felt all the horrors and miſeries from thoſe victors, that ſhe had formerly experienced on the part of Alaric and Attila, and the Pope, after having attempted a uſeleſs defence, fell into the hands of his enemies.—Thoſe aſtoniſhing ſucceſſes more cloſely united England to France. Henry gave money with a liberal hand to his ally, who ſent Lautrec into Italy to releaſe Clement, while Doria approached to aſſiſt the French general. Fortune, at firſt, promiſed the moſt glorious ſucceſſes.

The imperialiſts were driven out of Lombardy; the pope was ſet at liberty, Rome recovered her freedom, and even Lannoi himſelf gave way before the impetuoſity of the French. Lautrec, being maſter of the north of Italy, advanced towards the ſouth; entered the kingdom of Naples; penetrated to the capital, to which he laid ſiege; and the abilities of Doria, who at the ſame time attacked the city by ſea, muſt have inevitably occaſioned the ſurrender of the place: but while the illuſtrious Genoeſe fought with ſo much ardour and courage, envy blackened his reputation at court: ſome baſe courtiers attacked him privately; made him feel the ſevereſt mortifications; and concluded with extorting from the too credulous monarch, an order for arreſting him. Doria was informed of the deſign, and liſtening to nothing but the dictates of the moſt juſt indignation, he devoted his courage and abilities, his influence and ſhips to Charles. The whole face of affairs changed with the defection

of

of a ſingle man. The city received ſuccours; the want of proviſions deſtroyed the beſiegers; this was followed by a contagious diſtemper, and the death of the brave, but imprudent Lautrec, completed the misfortune.

Doria, whoſe capacity had ruined the French at Naples, flew back to Genoa, raiſed the city, and made himſelf maſter of his country. Charles rejoiced in the acquiſition of a man of ſuch diſtinguiſhed abilities, placed him at the head of his fleets, loaded him with honours, and made him ſovereign of Genoa. We here meet with one of the moſt glorious incidents that hiſtory affords. Doria, who had it in his power to enſlave his country, preſerved his authority as long as he thought it uſeful in appeaſing faction, reconciling families, and introducing a wiſe and moderate form of government. When he had the ſatisfaction to ſecure the happineſs of his fellow citizens, he publickly diveſted himſelf of all pre-eminence, and reſtored that liberty to Genoa, which was ſolidly eſtabliſhed by his prudence, and which actually reigns at this moment.

In the midſt of general confuſion, tranquility was ſuddenly reſtored to Europe. Charles, feeling uneaſineſs from the Turks, who had a hero at their head, from the Lutherans who were plotting, and from Henry, whoſe deſigns he ſaw through, conceived that peace was expedient, and granted it to the pope at Barcelona and to Francis, by the treaty of Cambray, which left France in poſſeſſion of Burgundy. The ſiſter of Charles was married to Francis, and this alliance, that ſo cloſely united the

two monarchs, ſeemed to cement a laſting reconciliation between them. The emperor, after acting the part of a peace-maker, as well as conqueror in Criſtendom, made a tour to Italy and regulated the affairs of that country. He reſtored the Milaneſe to Francis Sforca, confirmed the liberty of Genoa, forced the Venetians to ſubmit to the conditions which he dictated, and eſlaved Florence for ever.

The motions of the empire recalled him to Germany. The followers of Luther no longer uſed any myſtery or caution in declaring their doctrines. They were ſupported by powerful princes. The Landgrave of Heſſe, the moſt conſiderable next the Electors, joined the elector of Saxony, and thoſe two heads drew after them numberleſs others. They ſet forth their profeſſions of faith at Augſbourg, and demanded, or rather inſiſted on the liberty of following it openly. Charles, who was intereſted in keeping meaſures with the pope, and in ſecuring the votes of the Lutherans, was under the neceſſity of employing all his art, in order to preſerve a ſort of equilibrium between thoſe two enemies, who were not to be reconciled. He ſuſpended, for a time, the effects of their mutual animoſity, and prevailed upon both parties to elect Ferdinand king of the Romans. He then immediately aſſembled all the forces of Germany, and led them to the aſſiſtance of that brother.

Ferdinand, to whom Charles had already ceded Auſtria, was likewiſe become maſter of Hungary, but he had a formidable enemy who endeavoured

deavoured to deprive him of that throne. Soliman, famous for his many conqueſts, had entered that kingdom, at the head of his Janiſſaries, and threatened all Germany with deſtruction. The two religions which divided the earth, now ſaw the two moſt powerful princes ready to determine the fate of Europe. Charles was armed in order to preſerve Chriſtendom from ſlavery; the ſultan advanced to enſlave it. Fortune appeared fluctuating between thoſe two great monarchs, who ſeemed mutually to fear each other: but if Charles had not the glory of conquering Soliman, he had the honour, however, to oblige him to retreat. One part of Hungary was delivered, the fear of Germany diſpelled, and all Europe applauded her hero.

Fortune, at the ſame time was performing prodigies for him in another hemiſphere. Private ſubjects gained him vaſt empire and inexhauſtible ſources of wealth. Cortez diſcovered Mexico, penetrated into the heart of the country, at the head of ſome hundreds of men, defeated many thouſands of the Indians, dethroned a powerful monarch, and ſubjected ſix hundred leagues of a moſt fertile and opulent country. Pizara having paſſed the line, landed in Peru, diſplayed the ſame courage with the like ſucceſs, and ſubdued an empire no leſs extenſive, and infinitely richer. Some intrepid mariners, ſailing far beyond the limits then known, traverſed the waves of a new ſea in ſearch of Aſia, in order to ſubject the iſlands belonging to that quarter of the world. The mines of Potoſi and Chili, were at work for the fortunate

fortunate emperor. The ſpices and diamonds of the Eaſt were carried into his ports, and the riches of the new world became new weapons againſt the old.

A DOMESTIC misfortune, however, reached Charles on the ſummit of glory and power. Henry, whom political motives had united to Catherine of Arragon, was not long before he conceived an averſion for a conſort who poſſeſſed every virtue, without any engaging accompliſhments. The princeſs Mary was the fruit of their union, and ſuſpended the effects of the monarch's diſlike, while he remained inſenſible to any other object. But the charms of Ann Boleyn having awakened all the ſenſibility of a prince naturally voluptuous, and that artful woman, giving no hopes of enjoyment without her hand, Henry curſed the knot that tied him to Catherine. He ſought ſome pretext to diſſolve it, and imagined he found one in the former marriage of the queen. Wolſey, who never could forgive Charles for having diſappointed his ambition, rejoiced at this opportunity of being revenged, by degrading the aunt of the emperor. He encouraged the pretended ſcruples of Henry, and took upon himſelf to furniſh him with arguments. Catherine, in vain, proteſted that Arthur had been no more than a nominal huſband; that the union ſhe had formed with him was made null: almoſt all the ſchools of divinity, which were but the echoes of the powerful Wolſey, declared, that a marriage contracted with the widow of a brother ſhould be diſſolved. This important affair being carried before the tribunal

of

of Clement, at the very time that he was at enmity with Charles, took a favourable turn; but a reconciliation between the pontiff and the emperor, made a total alteration in matters, and Clement was in the moſt terrible perplexity; fluctuating between Henry, who threatened to break off all connection with Rome, and Charles, who terrified him with the innevitable ruin of the Medicis; he had no other remedy but to defer the dangerous deciſion, in hopes that time would furniſh him with the means of eluding the danger.

But Henry, the moſt reſolute, and impatient of mankind, ſtimulated, moreover, by the primate Cranmer, who privately favoured the doctrine of Luther, was provoked at the delays of Rome, called a private aſſembly, had his firſt marriage annulled, and contracted a ſecond with Ann Boleyn, which he ſoon after proclaimed. Clement, ſpurred on by the Spaniſh faction, complained that his authority was violated, and threatened to let looſe the thunders of the church. Through the mediation of Francis, they were ſuſpended, and matters likely to be accommodated, when the delay of a courier, and the precipitancy of the conclave rendered all the meaſures of France abortive. The excommunication fulminated againſt Henry, ſo exaſperated that prince, that he broke off all communication with Rome, ſeparated his kingdom from that ſee, and made himſelf ſupreme head of the national church. The form of the ancient worſhip was then entirely changed. The biſhops received new commiſſions, and exerciſed their authority as

an

an emanation from the power of the ſovereign. The monaſteries were ſuppreſſed, the relics burnt, and Lutheraniſm, that had crept into the kingdom, was in expectation of reigning in turn. But thoſe hopes quickly fell to the ground. The capricious monarch, powerfully attached to the doctrine of Rome, at the very time that he trampled on her ſceptre, condemned alike the adherents of the pope and his enemies, and the Catholic and Lutheran were ſometimes conſumed in the ſame fires together. The caprice of the prince ruled every thing; the people ſeemed to have loſt their dignity and ſpirit, and ſubmitted, like ſlaves, to the moſt abſurd commands. Every thing trembled under the inexorable Henry; and by a prodigy, that never had an example, while the hand of the ſovereign was ſubverting altars, ſhedding the blood of innocent and virtuous men, and capriciouſly ſporting with the laws, the ſtate enjoyed tranquility at home, and loſt nothing of her conſequence in other countries.

While England was made a ſcene of confuſion by her tyrant, France was adorned by a prince ambitious of every kind of glory. Francis having contended with Spain for ſuperiority of arms, was deſirous that his country ſhould ſhare the honour of genius with Italy. He ſet an example to his ſubjects for the encouragement of learning; he invited ſtrangers to inſtruct his people; he raiſed magnificent ſtructures for the protection and retreat of ſcience; he exhibited the firſt buildings of taſte in the capital; he encouraged the pencil and chiſel; and blending liberality

liberality with honour, he ſhewed France the firſt appearance of thoſe glorious times which his ſucceſſors were to procure her. How happy ſhould he have been if he had not darkened the glory of thoſe venerable cares by a barbarous perſecution. Humanity ſhuddered when ſhe ſaw that prince ſigning the moſt ſevere edicts againſt men, who were guilty of no other crime, but that of diſputing about matters equally indifferent and obſcure, and condemning thoſe very Lutherans to the flames of whom he had declared himſelf the protector in Germany. A war ſoon broke out anew. The baſe aſſaſſination of an ambaſſador from Francis by the duke of Milan, became the ſignal of a bloody rupture. The French monarch flattered himſelf with having Henry perpetually in his intereſts, and the outrages which Charles and that prince had mutually committed againſt each other, ſeemed an infallible pledge of their hatred. A calm of ſome years had filled his treaſury, and the new regulations, with regard to the troops, made them more formidable. The beginning anſwered thoſe expectations. The duke of Savoy, who had declared for the emperor, was driven out of his dominions, nor could all the abilities of Anthony de Leva preſerve the capital. The death of Sforca opened the gates of Lombardy, and, to complete this good fortune, Charles was abſent from Europe. That prince had ſailed for Africa in order to attack Barbaroſſa, who was ſupported by all the forces of Turkey; the temerity of the expedition portended nothing in appearance but misfortunes.

Thus

Thus every circumſtance conſpired in favour of Francis, and ſeemed to be infallible preſages of victory. The proſpect quickly changed; Europe was informed that Charles had acquired immortal glory, that Barbaroſſa had been defeated and obliged to fly, that the barbarian prince for whom he had intereſted himſelf was replaced upon the throne of Tunis, and that kingdom made tributary to Spain; that altars were erected to the chriſtian religion there, and that the triumph of the conqueror was adorned with the chains of an immenſe number of Chriſtians whom he had releaſed.

Charles returned to Naples, followed by twenty thouſand ſlaves, who were indebted to him for their liberty, and Rome received him as the deliverer of Chriſtendom. While he triumphed over the infidels by the ſword, he ſet the moſt powerful engines at work againſt his rival; he privately enliſted great numbers of men, ſo that he had an army ready to act as ſoon as there was occaſion; by his intrigues he gained over the Venetians to his intereſt; and his artful management recovered the friendſhip even of Henry, whoſe hatred appeared implacable. The moſt profound diſſimulation concealed at the ſame time his proceedings, and his enemy, who had it in his power to proſecute the advantages he had obtained, was lulled with the vain appearance of a reconciliation.

As ſoon as the Spaniſh monarch had all his engines prepared, he threw of the maſk, and diſplaying all his powers, at once, threatened de-

ſtruction

ſtruction to France. Naſſau, having entered Picardy by his orders, took Guiſe, beſieged Peronne, and carried fire and ſword to the very gates of Paris. Charles himſelf, accompanied by Anthony de Leva, penetrated into Provence at the head of a moſt flouriſhing army, and his artillery already began to batter the gates of Marſeilles. The ſudden death of the dauphin, of whom the moſt juſt expectations had been formed, increaſed the misfortunes of France, and all Europe looked upon her as undone. The firmneſs, reſolution and activity of the ſovereign preſerved her. Francis at length uniting prudence with valour, fortified the cities; laid the country waſte; checked the ardour of his troops; avoided coming to a battle, and left the ſtranger to periſh in a barren country, where every thing had been deſtoyed. A contagious diſtemper broke out from the want of proviſions, and ſpread itſelf in the camp of the imperialiſts. The army was waſting away, and Charles, who ſaw his enemy attack him with his own ſtratagems, returned to Italy with difficulty, after loſing one half of his troops with the beſt of his generals.

A revolution, no leſs favourable, happened in Picardy. The duke of Guiſe, whom the monarch diſpatched thither, behaved like the worthy deſcendant of ſo many heroes; and Naſſau, after being forced to raiſe the ſiege of Peronne, experienced the ſame diſappointments, and had the like fortune with his maſter. France ſeemed to aſſume the ſuperiority. All thoſe advantages were confirmed by a public alliance made with

Soliman; and Francis, who was ſo lately threatened with ruin, now appeared more powerful than ever. Artois, Piedmont and Catalonia became, in their turn the theatre of the war, and a prey to thoſe depredations, which, without being uſeful to either party, ſerved only to involve the unfortunate people in miſery.

When the animoſity of both parties ſeemed to rage with more violence than ever, it ſuddenly ſubſided, and two princeſſes who employed their mediation, reſtored tranquility to Europe. The Pope, Charles and Francis met ſoon after at Nice, and the chriſtian world was in hopes of a ſincere reconciliation between thoſe three great powers. The moſt tender friendſhip appeared to animate the emperor and the king; in their mutual embraces at Aiguemortes, they ſeemed to have forgot thoſe long and obſtinate quarrels that had been ſo fatal to the happineſs of mankind. All Europe looked upon them as eternally extinguiſhed when thoſe two illuſtrious rivals mutually gave each other the moſt generous proofs of confidence. Charles being obliged to paſs through France, in order to chaſtiſe the people of Ghent, who had revolted, refuſed the pledges he might have obtained for his ſafety, and with a noble confidence put himſelf into the hands of an enemy, whom he had detained in a ſevere captivity. Francis on the other hand rejected the ſecurities offered for the Milaneſe, of which the emperor had promiſed him the inveſture. The honours paid to the ſtranger, and the marks of friendſhip mutually given to the

two

two princes, confirmed the hopes of an everlaſting harmony. But the arrival of Charles at Ghent ſoon revived their hatred. He betrayed the confidence of Francis to Henry, and informed the proteſtants of Germany of the deſigns which the imprudent monarch had formed againſt them. The murder of two French ambaſſadors, committed by the order of one of the generals of Charles, having increaſed thoſe ſubjects of animoſity, lies, challenges, and the moſt groſs inſults were bandied about from one ſide to the other, and the war was re-kindled. Francis was in hopes that he had found an opportunity to humble his adverſary.

Charles had made an attempt upon Algiers with equal imprudence and ill ſucceſs. Having been defeated and obliged to return back with the ruins of his army, he ſeemed to have loſt ſome part of the conſequence which his many former ſucceſſes had gained him in Europe. Soliman aſſiſted the deſigns of France with all his forces, and his fleets uniting with thoſe of the king, carried terror into the ports of the two Sicilies. At the ſame time the Janiſſaries ravaged Hungary; and the proteſtants, whoſe friendſhip Francis had the art to regain, ſet Germany in a flame. The duke d'Anguyen, a prince of the blood of France, made the party of his maſter triumphant in Italy. All the experience of Duguat gave way to the ardour of that young hero, and a complete victory obtained at Ceriſoles laid open the Milaneſe. Francis, thus preſſing the enemy on every ſide, was on the point of acquiring a deciſive ſuperiority;

but the genius of Charles ſnatched the triumph out of his hands. He ſent an army againſt Soliman, which, by acting always on the defenſive, leſſened the impetuoſity of the Turks; he promiſed every thing to the Lutherans, and by that means kept them inactive; he ſtopped the fleets of Barbaroſſa, by the abilities of Doria; he drew Henry from England, and made him enter France at the head of a powerful army, while he advanced through Champagne with the flower of his troops. The Engliſh monarch and the emperor were to march haſtily towards Paris, and join their forces under the walls of that city. The taking of Boulogne by Henry, and of St. Dizier by Charles, ſeemed to realize their deſigns of conqueſt. Charles advanced towards Soiſſons, his light troops ſpread devaſtation as far as Meaux; and the inhabitants of Paris, who fancied they ſaw the enemy at their gates, deſerted the city in crowds.

Francis now diſtreſſed in his turn, was preſerved only by the diviſions which aroſe among the allies; and he thought himſelf happy in accepting the peace of Crepi, the conditions of which were dictated by the Germans. Charles having obtained his ends for the promiſe of a chimerical inveſture, now turned his arms againſt the Lutherans of Germany, whom he had amuſed in the time of danger, while Francis ſought conſolation from the arts, and terminated his courſe in the midſt of thoſe purſuits. He was a learned and beneficent prince, endowed with a noble mind, with courage and candour, and ſhould

not

not be confounded in the liſt of ordinary kings; but it would be judging too favourably of him, to imagine that he wanted nothing but ſucceſs. He wanted application to buſineſs, regularity and clearneſs in his plans, and perſeverance in the execution. He wanted penetration in the choice of his friends, as well as to diſtinguiſh merit, and was deficient in oeconomy. The diſgrace of Bourbon and Doria, the favour ſhewn to Bonnivet, the ſecrets communicated to Charles, his imprudent conduct at Pavia, the perſecution and ſeverity he exerciſed againſt errors, the followers of which might have been uſeful friends, the venality of places that was introduced in his reign, the oppreſſive taxes under which the people groaned, the revenues of which were conſecrated more to pleaſure than buſineſs, where all imperfections that will ſcarcely allow Francis a place among great kings. The taſte and paſſion he had however for literature, have thrown a veil over his defects; and France, who was indebted to him for the return of learning, was diſpoſed to excuſe all his errors, in conſideration of ſo eſtimable a gift.

The death of Francis ſeemed to open a way for his rival to the ſovereignty of Europe. The Lutherans, alarmed at his extravagant power, united their efforts; a hundred thouſand men marched under the ſtandards of the new ſect; the emperor had the art to divide them at firſt, but he ſaw them appear again in greater numbers, under the command of reſpectable ſovereigns. The elector of Saxony, and the Landgrave of Heſſe,

were at the head of the rebels, and threatened to deſtroy the ancient worſhip. Charles came up with them at Mulberg, his forces were leſs numerous, and it ſeemed as if every thing ſhould be againſt him. The duke of Alba, who became ſo famous afterwards, made his firſt appearance on this occaſion. The abilities of that young general aſtoniſhed both armies; the Lutherans ſaw their ſuperior numbers rendered uſeleſs, and the elector who was taken in arms, was threatened with loſing his head on a ſcaffold. France humbled, the Lutherans cruſhed, and Italy intirely governed by the emperor, ſeemed to confirm his power and greatneſs for ever; but the jealouſy occaſioned by thoſe ſucceſſes, rouſed all Europe againſt him. The council of Edward VI, who lately aſcended the throne of England, raiſed the party of the Lutherans: the electors, the moſt attached to Charles, declared in their favour.

Soliman appeared again in Hungary: Henry II, the new king of France, retook ſome conſiderable cities in Lombardy. The pope himſelf alarmed at ſo great proſperity, turned againſt the emperor, and aſſiſted his enemies privately. Lutheraniſm was now triumphant. Charles proving unſucceſsful againſt Metz, was defeated at Iſlebe, forced to fly before his own ſubjects, and obliged to ſeek ſhelter among the rocks of the Alps. His greatneſs of ſoul did not forſake him under thoſe diſappointments; he ſtruggled with fortune, and by efforts of wiſdom, celerity and prudence, he recovered victory and peace. He now enjoyed them

them completely, and being maſter of ſo many territories in both hemiſpheres, head of the chriſtian world, and at the very higheſt ſummit of power and glory, he abandoned them all, leſt the empire with his German dominions to his brother; and Spain, Italy, and Flanders, with the new world, to his ſon. He ſought happineſs in a retreat and obſcurity; and, after two years tranquility, he cloſed one of the moſt tumultuous reigns that ever exiſted with the compoſure of a philoſopher. Extraordinary penetration, aſtoniſhing art, unwearied application to buſineſs, a profound knowlege of men, and the art of placing them properly; a mind calm in proſperity, and unſhaken in adverſity; an activity which continually hurried him from one extremity of his empire to the other, were the talents that diſtinguiſhed Charles, and raiſed him to the firſt rank among thoſe who governed the world.

He was inferior to his rival in the qualities of the heart, but far exceeded him in abilities, and independent of ſuperiority of power, was formed to triumph over him.—Ambitious, artful, prudent, little ſcrupulous in point of religion, and always affecting to appear ſo, prodigal of his promiſes in danger, and preferring the advantages of breaking to the honour of keeping them; affable and open with his ſubjects, who in a manner adored him; a diſſembler with his enemies, whom he flattered only to deſtroy; this prince poſſeſſed all the virtues and vices neceſſary for the conqueſt of Europe, and would in all probability have ſub-

jected it, but for the courage of Francis and the capacity of Soliman.

ITALY.

Italy exhibited ſome remarkable changes in the courſe of this diviſion. At Rome the odious pontificate of Alexander VI, was followed by the turbulent reign of Julius II. To the latter ſucceeded the glorious days of Leo X, who was not only a great pontiff, but a great man. Religion reproached him for incredulity, and a paſſion for pleaſure—But learning and arts revered him as their father, and extolled his taſte, and immortalized his favours and protection. Adrian VI, who acquired the papal crown by the influence of his pupil, blindly devoted his authority to the intereſts of that prince. He was a man of no abilities, a narrow mind, and played a ſecondary part entirely under the direction of the emperor. Clement VII, a natural ſon of the Medicis, and nephew to the great Leo, was far from poſſeſſing the talents of his uncle; he had no other laudable quality but a fondneſs for learning, that was hereditary in his family. Paul III, ſhewed ſome taſte, reſolution and talents; but being accuſtomed to ſubaltern negociations, in which he had been educated; he had a mind more ſubtle than extenſive, and leſs qualified for the more important affairs of government; beſides his affection for ungrateful grand-children, made him direct his views to their elevation; and he ſacrificed to that deſign the great objects of his ſtation. Julius III, in an obſcure pontificate, ſhewed neither talents

nor

nor virtues: Marcellus II, had both, but being hurried to the tomb a few days after his acceſſion, had no opportunity of ſhewing any thing but hopes, which Peter, who was crowned by the name of Paul IV, converted into regret.

A new ſovereignty had been erected in Italy, under the pontificate of Paul III. The dutchies of Parma and Placentia that had been long annexed to the duchy of Milan, and afterwards returned to the ſee of Rome, were ſeparated from it by the intrigues of the pontiff, in favour of his grandſon Octavius. The new ſubjects of that prince in vain endeavoured to ſhake off a yoke that was become inſupportable; in vain they avenged the honour of their wives, and the lives of their moſt virtuous citizens, in the blood of the tyrant.

Paul, who had intereſted the emperor for his family, and let looſe the thunders of the church in their favour, confirmed the dominion of his grandſon Octavius; and the houſe of Farneſe has figured ever ſince among the ſovereigns of Italy.—The dukes of Savoy ſhut up between two of the moſt conſiderable powers in Chriſtendom, were the victims of their quarrels, and expoſed to misfortunes, from which all their prudence could not preſerve them. Charles III, attacked vigorouſly by the French, and but weakly aſſiſted by the imperialiſts, was the continual ſport of fortune; and the aſcendant, which the emperor obtained, could not repair his misfortunes. Enriched with the acquiſition of Montferrat, but ſtripped of Savoy and Piedmont, and driven even

from

from his capital, he ſcarce tranſmitted a few ſlender remains of ſo fine an inheritance to his ſon Philibert, who became illuſtrious afterwards for his valour.

Genoa, who had recovered her liberties by the generoſity of one great man, was near loſing them by the intrigues of an ambitious youth. An illuſtrious family, great riches, and the protection of France inſpired de Fieſco with a pride that diſdained an equality with his fellow citizens, over whom he deſigned to reign by means of a conſpiracy that was carried on with aſtoniſhing prudence. The author of the conſpiracy was drowned the very moment that all his engines were prepared to make him maſter of the city.—This accident ſaved Doria's family, and ſecured the liberty of the people. Genoa, however, in the courſe of thoſe diſſentions, loſt all conſequence abroad, and being ſtripped of the reſt of her colonies, ſhe was ſcarce able to ſtruggle againſt Corſica, that was ſtill left her, but diſdained her as a ſovereign.

Venice, having recovered by her policy from the injuries ſhe had received by the treaty of Cambray, reſumed the empire of her gulph in Italy. She made uſeleſs efforts to regain the commerce of the Eaſt, of which the Weſt had lately deprived her. But being attacked by a formidable neighbour, ſhe loſt the moſt valuable poſſeſſions, and eſcaped ruin only by mere dint of abilities and wiſe management.

Revolutions, no leſs ſudden than extraordinary, changed the fortune of Florence. We have

have already ſeen that city drive out the Medicis, with the aſſiſtance of Charles VIII. Theſe princes were reſtored by the protection of Lewis XII. After being baniſhed a ſecond time, they recovered their authority by the intrigues of Leo X. The misfortunes and captivity of Clement VII, having revived the courage of the enemies of their family, the Medicis were again expelled, and Florence recovered her liberty by the protection of the emperor. But the ſame prince ſoon after deprived her of it for ever. Alexander, nephew to Clement, and the unworthy deſcendant of ſo many heroes, having married the natural daughter of Charles, the liberty of Florence was made a ſacrifice to that alliance, and fell never to riſe again.

ALEXANDER under the title of duke, governed like a tyrant. The moſt exalted birth could not protect modeſty from the criminal attempts of the profligate duke, who was one of the moſt libidinous men. The murder of that prince, who was aſſaſſinated in the midſt of his pleaſures, gave ſome hopes of the reſtoration of the commonwealth. Philip Strozzi ſupported his fellow citizens with his fortune, his talents, and the moſt ardent love of liberty. But being born down by the power of the emperor, put to the moſt ſhameful tortures, and obliged to deſtroy himſelf in order to avoid torments ſtill more inhuman: liberty fled with him to the tomb; and the Medicis grown triumphant, obtained an abſolute and permanent authority in their country.

ENG-

ENGLAND.

In England religion continued to ſtain the altars with blood, and jealouſy equally beſmeared the throne. Ann Boleyn, after bringing Henry the famous Elizabeth, was accuſed of adultery and inceſt, and loſt her head on a ſcaffold. Jane Seymour, who ſucceeded her, died by a violent operation as ſhe was bringing Edward into the world. Ann of Cleves, the next in ſucceſſion, was divorced at the end of ſeven months. Catherine Howard having been convicted of adultery, periſhed by the hands of an executioner. Catherine Parr, an artful and ſenſible woman, but a concealed Lutheran, eſcaped death with difficulty, which the diſcovery of her ſentiments threatened.

The favourites had not a fate leſs terrible. Wolſey, after being loaded with the moſt ſevere and degrading mortifications, died of a broken heart, at the very time that an impeachment was begun againſt him by the commons, which threatened him with a more ignominious fate. Cromwell, who was declared vicar of his prince in ſpirituals as well as temporals, the object of his favours and confidence, and the inſtrument of his innovations, was condemned by him and ſacrificed to his caprice. Fiſher, eſteemed for his talents and reverenced for his virtues by his very enemies, was put to death, after a long and ſevere impriſonment. The chancellor Moore, who on account of the moſt engaging manners, great knowlege, the moſt eminent

eminent virtues, and numberleſs ſervices done to the ſtate, was looked upon as the glory of England, died upon a ſcaffold. All the friends of the monarch continually trembled for their fate, and fancied they ſaw the ſword ſuſpended over their heads.

At the ſame time the moſt wimſical laws were delivered from the throne, and the daſtardly compliance of a deſpicable parliament, who trembled at the frown of the prince, gave the ſanction of their authority to the caprice of the tyrant.

In the midſt of the general confuſion which he occaſioned in every civil and religious eſtabliſhment, the ſtate either remained in tranquility, or the factions that diſturbed it were ſuppreſſed with no leſs wiſdom than vigour. Juſtice was adminiſtered with uncommon equity, the Scotch were repulſed, and the intrigues of the Engliſh monarch made them tremble for their own liberty. Europe conſidered England as the only counterpoiſe ſhe had between the two great powers that were deciding her fortune.

In the midſt of this continual medley of prudence and folly, Henry died quietly in his bed. He was a prince of a ſingular turn; a whimſical compound of wiſdom and error, of the moſt ſhining virtues, and the moſt deteſtable vices; one of thoſe prodigies or rather monſters of nature, in whom ſhe is pleaſed to unite the qualities which diſtinguiſh the beſt princes with what ſerve to form the character of the moſt ſavage tyrants. Three children, a ſon, and two

daughters

daughters ſurvived Henry; Mary was the offſpring of a repudiated mother; Elizabeth the daughter of a woman who ſuffered death as a criminal. They were both declared illegitimate by an act of parliament that had never been repealed, and both declared capable of the ſucceſſion by the ſame people who were ſlaves to the will of of their maſter in his very contradictions. Edward VI, the only one whoſe legitimacy was unclouded by any objection, ſucceeded his father under the guardianſhip of his maternal uncle Edward Seymour, who was created duke of Somerſet.

This nobleman who was privately a Zuinglian, and Cranmer, an avowed Lutheran, were leagued againſt the catholics. They inſpired the young king with a hatred againſt them, removed the followers of that worſhip from all places of truſt, conferred thoſe honours on their enemies, and encouraged the preachers of the reformation.

The parliament having been accuſtomed to comply with the will of their rulers, borrowed the doctrine of every ſect, and made a religion of their own that reſembled none of them. The maſs was aboliſhed, prieſts were permitted to marry, the images were deſtroyed, and divine ſervice was performed in the vulgar tongue. Ambition, ever ready to aſſume the maſk of religion, diſturbed the ſtate, and produced an important revolution. While Somerſet devoted his whole attention to the eſtabliſhment of his authority and religion, he imprudently raiſed the author of his future deſtruction. Dudley who, from being a man of no great family, was

created

created earl of Warwick, had gained the confidence of the regent. He made himſelf uſeful by his knowlege, and beloved by an appearance of the moſt diſintereſted zeal.

HAVING ſecurely eſtabliſhed his favour and influence, he formed the deſign of raiſing himſelf on the ruins of his benefactor. The traitor effected a rupture between the regent and his brother lord Seymour the admiral; he ſowed the ſeeds of hatred and diffidence between them, inflamed the impetuoſity of the one, fomented the ſuſpicions of the other, and perſuaded Somerſet to ſtain his hands in the blood of his brother, whom the duke had condemned by the parliament. This crime made the regent eternally odious to the friends of the unfortunate Seymour. Warwick then approached nearer to his ſovereign, gained his ear and confidence by his intrigues, and filled the mind of the young monarch with dangerous ſuſpicions of his uncle.

As ſoon as he ſaw his intrigues were ſucceſsful he avowed himſelf an enemy to Somerſet, accuſed him openly, forced him to reſign the regency, made himſelf regent under the title of duke of Northumberland, governed with the moſt artful tyranny, and ſucceeded ſo far as to have his former benefactor beheaded.

THE ambition of the new regent was far from being ſatiated. The honour of placing his ſon on the throne became the only object of his meaſures. He inſinuated to the king that his two ſiſters were not to ſucceed him; Mary Stuart, queen of Scotland, heireſs to the throne

after

after thoſe princeſſes was repreſented as a bigot, violently attached to the church of Rome; that her prejudices were increaſed by her education in France, and conſequently that ſhe would be ready to exert all the authority of the crown in order to deſtroy the reformation. Jane Gray, grand-daughter of the ſiſter of Henry VIII, and the duke of Suffolk, was the fourth claimant; ſhe was a moſt amiable woman, of ſingular beauty, exalted virtue, ſublime underſtanding, adorned with all literary knowlege, and attached moreover to the new doctrine which ſhe thought more conformable to philoſophy. He recommended Jane to Edward, as a princeſs who would cheriſh the reformation that was ſo dear to the young monarch, and ſecure the happineſs of his people. By this means he perſuaded him to exclude the three firſt from the ſucceſſion, and to ſubſtitute the laſt in their place. At the ſame time, the artful Northberland, by his intrigues, promiſes, and preſents prevailed upon the family of Jane to give her in marriage to his ſon.

He now ſaw the way to the throne open to his family, and the life alone of Edward retarded his hopes. Whether it was nature ſeconded the views of the regent, or a crime ſecured his projects, the young king died in the ſixteenth year of his age, regretted by his people, who imagined they perceived in the youth the beams of a noble mind and a love of juſtice, which were the objects of the public expectations. Northumberland was now on the point

of

of reaching the ſummit of human greatneſs. The ſtigma caſt on the legitimacy of the two daughters of Henry removed them from the throne. Religion was the engine he employed againſt Mary Stuart; Edward was hurried to the tomb; Jane Gray wasa ppointed, by the laſt will of the prince, and that princeſs, being married to lord Guilford, the ſon of the regent, ſecured the poſſeſſion of the crown to his family. Incapable of being diſmayed by any crime, he concealed the death of the king for ſome time, and invited the two princeſſes to viſit their brother, in hopes to ſurpriſe and make a ſacrifice of them. But Mary having received information from Ruſſel, called her friends about her, and being ſeconded by Elizabeth, who joined her at the head of a thouſand horſe, ſhe marched haſtily towards London. Her unqueſtionable rights, the love the people had for the memory of Henry VIII, and their hatred to Northumberland, all diſconcerted the deſigns of that ambitious man. He was himſelf obliged to acknowlege the legitimate ſovereign; and lady Jane Gray in a few days loſt the ſceptre which ſhe had accepted with reluctance; and the unfortunate hands that held it were bound with fetters.

The death of Northumberland ſignalized the new reign, and the voice of the nation eſtabliſhed the rights of the queen. We have ſeen a general change made in religion under Henry without any obſtacle. Mary effected a quite contrary revolution with as little difficulty. The pliant par-

liament, indifferent with regard to religious worſhip, ſeemed to adopt that alone of the prince, and were ready to aboliſh the ſectaries or confirm them according to his will or caprice. The biſhops of the Roman communion were re-eſtabliſhed; the preachers of the reformation baniſhed; Cranmer, the chief ſupport of Lutheraniſm, was diſgraced: Cardinal Pole, whoſe affinity to kings mande him leſs venerable ſtill than his virtues, and Gardiner, the moſt learned prelate in England, both ſufferers for the Roman religion, were placed in the council, and governed the helm of affairs. The marriage of the queen with the archduke Philip, ſon to the emperor, confirmed this ſudden revolution, and became the epocha of the triumph of the catholics.

The proteſtants were alarmed; and, perſuading themſelves that they were at the very brink of deſtruction, they entered into a conſpiracy, the dreadful refuge of deſpair. A plot that tended to reſtore lady Jane Gray to the throne was diſcovered, and ſerved only to accelerate the fate of that princeſs. All ſects united on this occaſion to extol the unfortunate Jane, and to bewail her death.—Content with the empire which ſuperior knowlege and virtue confer, ſhe had aſcended the throne with reluctance, and deſcended thence without concern. Condemned in the flower of youth, ſhe appeared on the ſcaffold with a ſerenity and reſolution that drew tears even from her enemies. A conſort, who was worthy of her, ſuffered the ſame fate; and the blood of thoſe two victims fully diſplayed the character of Mary. The moſt intem-

intemperate zeal and boundleſs cruelty directed the operations of this reign. It was by tortures and flames that ſhe and Philip expected to make their party triumph. The moſt eſtimable and learned men, reverend prelates, women and children were thrown into the flames by the inhuman perſecutors. A biſhop of London, not only carried the fire himſelf to conſume the victims, but added inſult to miſery, and encouraged the executioners.

SCOTLAND now exhibited the reign of James IV, whom neither abilities or virtues could preſerve from the rage of ſedition; and who, after a tumultuous adminiſtration, was ſlain in a battle, while he balanced the fortune of England. The minority of his ſon, James V, increaſed the diſſentions which did not terminate, until he was in a condition to govern himſelf. This monarch is celebrated in the records of his own country for his love of juſtice; and the annals of France extol him, on account of his zealous attachment to his allies. The latter could not refuſe her admiration to a foreign prince, who, without ſolicitation, on the bare rumour of the danger to which his friend was expoſed, haſtily quitted his dominions, croſſed the ſea at the head of his nobles, and went to offer his ſervices and blood to Francis I, who was menaced by the arms of Charles and Henry.

SCOTLAND was again involved in confuſion and troubles; they became violent during the minority of Mary Stuart, who was born eight days before the death of her father. The queen's mo-

ther, ſiſter to Francis of Guiſe, found the ſtate torn by two factions. The French, whoſe intereſt ſhe favoured, would have the infant-princeſs united from her cradle with one of their princes. Henry VIII, whoſe power terrified the nation, inſiſted upon her being given to Edward. The civil war which ſeemed to be at an end by the precaution that was taken of ſending Mary to France, did but change the object. Religion ſucceeded to political intereſts; and enthuſiaſm, the moſt cruel of tyrants, excited all the Scotch to take up arms. The preachers of the new doctrine had penetrated into the kingdom, and a great number of followers prepared to defend their doctrine. Wiſhart was in favour with the populace; he continually preached againſt the catholics, and his enthuſiaſm daily gained over the people. The earl of Arran and cardinal Beaton, favourites of the queen-regent, who was a zealous ſtickler for the church of Rome, thought it neceſſary to make an example of the ſeditious preacher. Arran was timid, and appealed to the aſſiſtance of the laws; but the cardinal, more violent, ſeized Wiſhart, tried and condemned him to the flames as a heretic. This act of ſeverity was quickly followed by the moſt terrible vengeance. The palace of the cardinal was forced open, the prelate himſelf deliberately butchered, and this murder became the ſignal of a barbarous war. From one extremity of Scotland to the other the people butchered each other under the moſt ſacred banners; and enthuſiaſm exhibited ſcenes of barbari-

ty,

ty, treachery, and unnatural murders, of which that fury alone is capable.

SWITZERLAND.

RELIGION inflamed the minds of people in every part of Europe, and her quarrels diſturbed the moſt peaceable ſtates. The Swiſs, after being defeated at Marignan, were reconciled to France by a peace, which, on account of its permanency, had been frequently called the eternal peace. From that time they lived peaceably on their mountains, indifferent with reſpect to all powers, they were content with the glory of ſignalizing in other countries that valour and fidelity which made their troops be valued and ſought by all nations. The rage of theological diſputes at length diſturbed the happineſs of that peaceful people, and armed the different orders of the ſtate.

ZUINGLIUS, following the ſteps of Luther, but with more reſolution, ventured to preach at Zurich, the place of his birth, opinions that tended to anihilate every form of the ancient worſhip. The eccleſiaſtics attempted, in vain, to ſilence him; the populace crowded eagerly to hear his ſermons; and, being countenanced by the magiſtrates, they broke off all connexion with Rome, and confirmed the ſentiments of their apoſtle by the authority of the laws. Some neighbouring cantons, perceiving a ſenſible advantage in thoſe innovations, quickly followed their example. The reſt, faithfully attached to the religion of their anceſtors, deteſted the change; and, ſpurred on

by the moſt intemperate zeal, endeavoured to reſtore the old ceremonies by power and ſlaughter. A bloody battle, wherein Zuinglius, after performing the duty of a chriſtian as well as a ſoldier, loſt his life, ſeemed to ruin the adherents of that ſectary. But the proſpect of the miſeries in which mutual enthuſiaſm was going to involve their country, awakened the good ſenſe of that wiſe nation, and both parties laid down their arms; each canton allowed their neighbours the privilege of chuſing their own religion, and peace returning to their mountains, brought back harmony and felicity.

GENEVA.

GENEVA at the ſame time was erected into a republic. She had been till then governed by her biſhop and the duke of Savoy; and after ſhaking off the yoke of them both, and breaking the chains both civil and religious, with which thoſe two powers had oppreſſed her, ſhe eſtabliſhed the new form of worſhip and introduced the ſweets of democracy among her inhabitants. The people of Geneva in ſubjection only to the laws, happy in their independence, rich by their induſtry, and revered for their knowlege, have ever ſince preſerved the precious privilege of freedom; and given to their country, though very ſmall and thinly inhabited, a degree of fame which very extenſive and powerful nations have not been able to acquire.

DUKES

DUKES OF PRUSSIA AND COURLAND.

THE ſame principle gave riſe to new ſovereignties in the north. Albert of Brandenbourg, grand maſter of the Teutonic order, embraced with joy a doctrine that freed him from the yoke of his vows, dropped the title of chief of the order that had elected him, and preſerving the rich provinces that were ſubject to the knights of whom he was maſter, he laid the foundation in Pruſſia of that monarchy, which has riſen to ſuch a degree of power in our days. Godefroi Ketler, the chief of the knights of the ſword who were eſtabliſhed in Livonia on the model of the Teutonic order, copied the example of Albert, ſeized on Courland, which belonged to his order, and had it erected into a duchy, by doing homage to Poland.

POLAND.

POLAND was in obſcurity under John Albert, made no appearance under Alexander, and broke forth with ſplendor in the reign of Sigiſmond I, the brother of his two predeceſſors. In continual war with the Ruſſians, ſhe triumphed over the immenſe numbers of that brave but uncultivated nation; and in three ſucceſſive wars drove them to the very centre of Muſcovy. Mazovia was at the ſame time ſubjected to the throne; the people of Wallachia repulſed; and the Turks kept in awe. Sigiſmond II, who followed the path of his father, attacked the ſame people with equal ſucceſs. The fertile territory of Livonia was made

a province of his empire, and the new dukes of Courland and Pruſſia were obliged to acknowlege themſelves his vaſſals.

RUSSIA.

Russia triumphant under John Baſilowitz, the worthy deliverer of his country, maintained her conſequence under Baſil, his ſon; acquired the important city of Smolenſko; ſtruggled with advantage againſt the Coſſacs, and, leſs fortunate againſt the Poles, ſhe made amends for thoſe misfortunes by her continual victories in the Eaſt. This power began to be reſpectable over all Europe, her forces were already grown formidable; and Maximilian, in treating with the Czar, gave him the title of emperor. He was a great politician and warrior, but one of the moſt inhuman tyrants that ever appeared. John Baſilowitz II, was equally terrible to his ſubjects and neighbours. In this reign, Ruſſia was increaſed by the kingdoms of Aſtracan and Caſan; ſwallowed up the remains of the immenſe monarchy of the Tartars; and extended her authority from the borders of the Baltic to the furtheſt extremity of the Caſpian ſea.

SWEDEN.

Sweden now exhibited important ſcenes. She renounced once more the treaty of Calmar, and breaking off all connection with Denmark and John her king, re-eſtabliſhed the dignity of adminiſtrator. Suant-Sture, who was inveſted with that honour, ſurpaſſed the expectations of his fellow-citizens. He triumphed over the Danes, the Poles,

Poles, and the Ruſſians; paid obedience to the laws, protected the people, and left, after his death, a tender remembrance of his virtues and victories. The nation, with the view of rewarding the merits of the father, conferred the ſame dignity on his ſon Stenon, and ſupported him againſt the intereſt and faction of Eric Troll, a venerable old man, but whoſe attachment to the Danes gave the people ſome alarms. They beſtowed however the archbiſhopric of Upſal, on the ſon of that ſenator. This exalted dignity, his immenſe riches, the great authority he had over the clergy, and the honour of being head of the ſenate, made him almoſt equal to the adminiſtrator.

Stenon young, inexperienced, generous and open, eagerly ſought every opportunity to gain the friendſhip of the Trolls; he was deaf to the caution and diffidence with which his friends endeavoured to inſpire him. Thoſe proceeded from the knowlege they had of the character of the new prelate. They knew him to be of a factious and inflexible diſpoſition, ready to ſacrifice every thing to his reſentment and pride. He was enraged to ſee Stenon preferred to his father, nor could he conceal his deſires of revenge; and ſeeing no other means to gratify his wiſhes but by diſturbing the ſtate, he laboured to involve it in confuſion and trouble. The Danes continually regretted the loſs of ſo fine a kingdom, their ſovereigns reſtrained by the laws, eagerly wiſhed for the poſſeſſion of a crown that flattered them with a more independent authority.

Christian

CHRISTIAN II, ſucceſſor to John, who was a man of infatiable ambition, and capable of every crime that might help to gratify that paſſion, conceived great expectations: he had a powerful party; the clergy were always devoted to his intereſt, and the Biſhops eſpecially regretted an authority that ſecured their own. The emiſſaries of Chriſtiern cheriſhed thoſe fatal diſpoſitions, and kindled with thoſe reverend hands the ſecret flames of diſcord that were to ſet all Sweden in a blaze.—Theſe were the means the archbiſhop purſued in order to be revenged. He encouraged the clergy to declaim againſt Stenon, carried on a ſecret correſpondence with Chriſtiern, fortified his caſtles, aſſembled his vaſſals and dependents, and prepared for open rebellion. Stenon ſaw through his deſigns, winked at them, and endeavoured to gain his friendſhip, but found him inflexible.

TROLL growing more bold, through the mildneſs of the ſupreme magiſtrate, ſeized upon two of the moſt important bulwarks of the kingdom, and while he invited the Danes to make a deſcent in Sweden, he ſolicited his country to annul the election of the adminiſtrator. Being vigorouſly attacked, defeated, and ſhut up in his citadel, he was obliged to ſubmit to the orders of the general aſſembly, who referred the ſentence of the rebel to the ſenate. He was condemned, ſtripped of his dignity, and confined to a convent.

STENON now fancied himſelf ſecure, and the ſtate began to recover. But the pope and Chriſtiern ſoon raiſed new ſtorms againſt him. Leo X,

who

who imagined his authority was violated by the removal of the archbiſhop diſcharged his thunders. Chriſtiern entered Sweden, burned and ravaged the country, and advanced in order to beſiege Stockholm. The adminiſtrator flew to oppoſe him, defeated his troops, hemmed him in between the city and the ſea, and was on the point of cruſhing the invader entirely, when he imprudently liſtened to propoſals for an accommodation. Stenon had in his camp Guſtavus Vaſa, a young prince, deſcended from the ancient kings, whoſe many excellent qualities made him the hopes of the nation. The Daniſh monarch deſired to ſee the prince under the ſpecious pretext of conferring with him relative to the peace, and fled with his prey, of which the credulous Stenon endeavoured in vain to deprive him. He returned to Denmark with Guſtavus in his poſſeſſion, and made preparations for renewing the war. France ſupplied him with troops which Otho the German commanded. They landed with ſucceſs, and the moſt frightful deſolation marked the progreſs of the Danes. The bloody battle fought on the ice of the Lake Veter, determined the fate of Sweden. The adminiſtrator after behaving like a hero, ſunk under the abilities of Otho, and periſhed in the defeat. A ſecond engagement completed the misfortunes of the Swedes, and opened the road of Stockholm to the Danes. The people fled trembling from the cities, the prieſts exulted and encouraged the ſedition, the archbiſhop left the cloiſter, reſumed his dignity, and placed himſelf at the head of

the

the ſtrangers. The ſtates aſſembled at Upſal, at which Troll preſided, and being intimidated by Otho, revived the treaty of Calmar, and conferred the crown on Chriſtiern.

That prince croſſed over into Sweden, ſolemnly accepted the throne, and marched to Stockholm, where the widow of the adminiſtrator ſtill ſupported the national cauſe. He attacked and preſſed the city, threatened, promiſed, and at length brought the beſieged to a capitulation. All that the inhabitants demanded was granted. Chriſtiern with the capital, had the whole kingdom in ſubjection.—Flatterers, with a vulgar and cruel miſtreſs, eaſily perſuaded a prince naturally barbarous, to get rid of the leaders of the adverſe party. For this purpoſe Chriſtiern invited the ſenate, the biſhops, and heads of the nobility to a ſplendid entertainment. In the midſt of the feaſt and the joy which it inſpired, the archbiſhop entered, and with tears in his eyes, implored vengeance for the inſults that had been offered to him. The monarch pretending to decline the deciſion of an affair in which, he ſaid, religion was concerned, two Daniſh prelates, who were appointed commiſſaries, and ſold to their maſter, were ordered to try the caſe. The priſons were filled and afterwards opened, only to carry to the ſcaffolds erected in the market place, biſhops, ſenators, gentlemen and ladies of the moſt illuſtrious rank. In the very midſt of thoſe executions, the canon was diſcharged, and the ſoldiers fell ſword in hand upon the unhappy people, and deluged the ſtreets with

the

the blood of thouſands. Chriſtiern imagined he had at length ſolidly eſtabliſhed his throne on the bodies of ſo many victims, one alone was wanting, and he ſent in purſuit of him.

Gustavus ſurpriſed by the Daniſh Monarch, and committed to the care of a nobleman of Denmark, won the affections of his keeper, and that good fortune procured him the means of liberty. Nature had given this young hero a happy figure, an extenſive genius, and a generous ſoul that glowed with the love of his country, and a deteſtation for tyrants. He was inſpired, moreover, with a noble confidence that perſuaded him he was born to command Sweden, and relieve her misfortunes. With thoſe ſentiments he formed the reſolution of delivering his country from the yoke of the Danes.

Being at liberty and ſtill in the territories of his perſecutors, an object of the hourly reſearches of numberleſs emiſſaries, he diſguiſed himſelf in the habit of a peaſant, travelled on foot for two days, paſſed through ſeveral Daniſh cities, and reached Lubec. Having in vain ſolicited ſuccours from the regency of that city, he took ſhipping and landed at Calmar. The garriſon knew him; he was in hopes they were his friends, but he was ſo far miſtaken, that he was in danger of being delivered up to Chriſtiern. After being obliged to paſs through the army of his enemies in a cart loaded with ſtraw, he reached Suenonia, where he was abandoned by his relations, threatened by his friends, rejected by his vaſſals, and diſmiſſed by the Carthuſians, whom his

his father had eſtabliſhed. An old ſervant of his family concealed him in a barn, and in this ſituation he was firſt informed that his family had periſhed by the hands of executioners. Terrified with the apprehenſions of being diſcovered, he travelled to Delecarlia, accompanied by a guide, who robbed and deſerted him. Loſing his way in the mountains, he had no other reſourſe to ſupport life, but to hire himſelf to labour in the mines. He was known by a woman, who conducted him to the houſe of a gentleman, where he met with ſome friendſhip, but more terror. He applied to another, who received and betrayed him, nor could he have eſcaped this misfortune, but for the compaſſion of the wife of the traitor.

The rector of a country pariſh concealed him, ſhared in his patriotic deſigns, and perſuaded him to addreſs himſelf to the peaſants.

On a Chriſtmas-day, when the ſolemnity of the feſtival had drawn together a great multitude of people, Guſtavus aſſembled them around him, and after raiſing their attention and curioſity, diſcovered his name and family, and endeavoured to inſpire them with ſentiments of revenge and liberty. His perſon, his eloquence, his noble extraction and ſingular misfortunes, and the north wind happening to blow in the midſt of his harangue, which was conſidered as a happy omen by thoſe ſuperſtitious men, all conſpired to perſuade the peaſants to his purpoſe. They hailed him, with loud acclamations, as their deliverer.

Gustavus fully ſenſible of the importance of this precious moment, did not ſuffer their ardour

to

to cool; he put himſelf at their head, marched againſt the enemy, his army increaſing every ſtep as he advanced, and by aſtoniſhing efforts of valour and prudence, he drove the Danes out of thoſe provinces, over which he was declared adminiſtrator. He then learned, that Chriſtiern enraged at his ill ſucceſs, had ordered his mother and ſiſter to be drowned.

Gustavus now inflamed with the deſire of avenging the lives of perſons ſo dear to him, ſet no bounds to his reſentment; he made a dreadful ſlaughter of the tyrant's ſubjects, and purſued them to the very walls of Stockholm. Having made himſelf maſter of that city, the diet conferred the ſceptre on him as a reward for his victories and favours. Chriſtiern in the mean time returned to his own dominions, where he met with no better fortune, and Troll went to Norway in order to excite more confuſion and troubles.

The new king, after being the deliverer and avenger of his country, now bent his thoughts to raiſe it to a flouriſhing condition. He introduced a politeneſs and magnificence into his court, to which it was before a ſtranger; he invited men of learning, and encouraged them by honours and rewards. He took advantage of the misfortunes of Chriſtiern, and made a peace with his ſucceſſor that reſtored tranquility to Sweden. He made new regulations with reſpect to the revenues, and introduced a better diſcipline among his troops. The love and veneration of his ſubjects being now increaſed by thoſe cares and labours which

ſhewed

ſhewed him to be a great legiſlator as well as an illuſtrious conqueror, he made their affection inſtrumental to the moſt important and difficult revolution.

The clergy had ever been the ſoul of faction and ſedition; their power bid defiance to that of the ſovereign, and their riches ſurpaſſed thoſe of the throne. Guſtavus was perſuaded that it was neceſſary to humble that body, and the triumph of Lutherianiſm appeared to him the moſt effectual way to accompliſh his deſign. He purſued this method with great art, and concealed his intention a long while; when he had gained the minds of the people by the aſſiſtance of the doctors of that ſect, he openly propoſed to adopt the new doctrine. The clergy in vain ſet all the engines of religion in motion, the reſolution of the prince removed every obſtacle, the Roman worſhip was aboliſhed, the reformation became the religion of the ſtate; Olaus Petri, the founder of the new church, was declared head of it, and the immenſe riches of the monks became the reſources of the throne. The inſurrections produced by this change, ſerved only to confirm it; the victories of the prince ſecured it againſt every attempt, and the blood of a ſmall number made every thing ſubmit to his authority.

Having thus maſtered the clergy, he then directed his views to the nobility, and forced them to reſtore to the crown the manors which they had uſurped. He concluded with making himſelf formidable by powerful alliances, and exerted his authority in order to have the throne declared hereditary;

hereditary; this increaſe of power he employed for the happineſs of his ſubjects.

In Denmark, John I, who had recovered the ſceptre of Sweden, was deprived of it a ſecond time. After vain efforts to regain it again, he was obliged to turn his arms in order to ſuppreſs the inſurgents, who diſturbed the provinces, and who were encouraged to attempt every thing under ſo weak a prince. Chriſtian II, the tyrant of Denmark, as well as Sweden, after having been driven out of the latter by Guſtavus, was ſoon after dragged from the throne by his own ſubjects, who deſpiſed and deteſted him; he behaved like a coward in misfortunes, under which he meanly crouched, abdicated, and ſubmitted to captivity; retreated, ſolicited ſuccours of the emperor, who diſdained to liſten to him, and made vain attempts againſt his uncle, who was become his ſucceſſor. He was vanquiſhed, taken priſoner, and ſhut up in a caſtle, where he remained ten years, and was then ſet a liberty, merely through contempt. Frederic, who was elected in the room of his nephew, after uſeleſs efforts to conquer Sweden, at length concluded with acknowleging Guſtavus.

The war, which was renewed on account of a rebel, who ſubjected the iſland of Gothland, furniſhed none but trifling events, and ended with an interview between the two kings. An advantageous peace having reſtored external tranquility, Frederic took that opportunity to defeat the attempts of Chriſtian, who after regaining his liberty, endeavoured to recover the throne which

he had loſt by his exceſſes. The tyrant aſſiſted by his faithful Troll, was in hopes of exciting a rebellion in Norway, but thoſe odious friends had not abilities to effect their deſigns.

TROLL periſhed in an engagement, and Chriſtian being taken priſoner a ſecond time, he left the generous Frederic to devote his reign to the happineſs of his ſubjects. Chriſtian III, on whom the people conferred the ſceptre of his father, purſued the ſame deſigns, diſplayed ſimilar virtues, and made the tranquility he enjoyed inſtrumental to purpoſes ſtill more beneficial to his people. Denmark by his kindneſs became a new retreat for the arts, and the wiſe monarch converted the injuries he did religion to their advantage.

PORTUGAL daily flouriſhed, her mariners continued their diſcoveries, and her admirals made new conqueſts. John II, deſpiſing the timid advice of his council, animated more than ever the efforts of his ſubjects by liberality and promiſes.

VASCO DE GAMA, ſet ſail from Liſbon under the protection and authority of his ſovereign, advanced as far as Cape Tormentes, and braving the ſtorms and dangers that had diſcouraged thoſe who purſued the ſame courſe before, he doubled the Cape, penetrated into the Eaſtern Ocean, and for the firſt time, diſplayed the flag and colours of the Weſt in thoſe remote ſeas.

AFTER ſailing along a coaſt ſix hundred miles in extent, he ſteered his courſe towards India, and arrived at Calicut, where he made the name

of

of a Portugueze reſpectable. Almeida followed his ſteps and puſhing his diſcoveries ſtill farther, began to deprive Egypt of the trade that enriched her. The progreſs was ſtill improved under the great Emanuel, the friend of the arts and the protector of navigation.

Illustrious Alburkeque, the worthy confident of that prince's authority, after viſiting the moſt remote limits of Aſia, ſubjected Malabar, founded Goa, diſcovered the iſlands of Ceylon, the Sonde, and the Moluccas, planted the ſtandards of his maſter in thoſe places, and ſent to Liſbon diamonds, pearls, indigo and thoſe precious ſpices which luxury has made abundant ſources of wealth. He obtained the moſt ſignal victories over the Indians, who would not patiently ſubmit to wear the chains of the people of another hemiſphere. In like manner he defeated the ſultan of Egypt, who was enraged to ſee the origin of the proſperity of his dominions deſtroyed; and the Venetians, who united againſt thoſe ſucceſſes that tended to cut off the ſources of their opulence in Europe. At the ſame time Alvarez de Cabral ſailed towards the Weſt, and landed at Brazil, a rich province of America, where the moſt valuable products were found in abundance, and which is ſtill at this hour the moſt powerful colony belonging to Portugal. Emanuel in the mean while made his glory ſubſervient to the happineſs of his ſubjects, and merited no leſs by his abilities than his ſucceſſes, that his government ſhould be ſtyled the golden reign. His adminiſtration would have been completely glo-

rious if his blind condeſcenſion for a conſort whom he idolized, had not betrayed him into the impolitic and unjuſt meaſure of expelling the Moors, who cultivated the lands of his kingdom.

John III, followed the path marked out by his anceſtors, and his people diſcovered immenſe empires. China, that ancient, populous, and fertile monarchy, which preſented ſo wonderful a ſyſtem of religion, a morality ſo pure, and the model of ſo perfect a government, was firſt known to the Portugueze, and her wonders aſtoniſhed the weſtern world. The iſland of Hainan was ſubdued, and Macao in its centre, became one of the great receptacles of commerce. Japan, till then unknown to all the reſt of the world, was the ſource of a very conſiderable trade, and the theatre of the zeal of Xaverius, who founded a flouriſhing church there. The Philippines, that lay contigious to both hemiſpheres, united the ſhips that came from Liſbon by the Eaſt, with the colours of Seville that arrived by the Weſt, and the uncertainty of their poſſeſſion occaſioned bloody conteſts.

The weak Bajazet, after an obſcure reign, was deprived of the ſceptre which he diſgraced. The gallant ſoldiers, who guarded the throne, provoked at the inactivity in which they were kept by their ſovereign, placed the crown on the head of Selim, who began his reign with the death of his father and brother. This new emperor was treacherous, violent and cruel, but his ſubjects overlooked all his vices. Being ſtrangers to any other virtue, but that of courage,

they

they looked with admiration on a ſultan, whom victory attended every where. He deprived the chriſtians of a part of the iſlands which they poſſeſſed in the Archiepelago; he defeated powerful armies in Syria, ſubjected that extenſive country, and annexed it to his dominions. He attacked Egypt, diſperſed the Mamelucs, who were before ſo formidable, ſubverted the throne of the ſultans, and after putting the laſt of thoſe princes to death, added that powerful kingdom to his empire. Ambitious of treading in the ſteps of Alexander and Cæſar, whoſe lives and actions he continually ſtudied, he marched into Aſia, augmented his fame by new victories, deſtroyed thoſe principalities which ſtill ſubſiſted on the borders of the black ſea, then returned haſtily to Europe, where he died while he was preparing for the conqueſt of Rhodes and Italy. Soliman II, who ſucceeded him, had a dangerous rebellion to encounter at his acceſſion to the throne. Gazelle, governor of Syria, endeavoured to re-eſtabliſh the authority of the Mamelucs, and that people had already recovered part of Egypt. Soliman marched rapidly againſt them, attacked them, chaſtiſed ſome, pardoned others, and in a ſingle campaign totally ſubjected the rebels. Having thus reſtored tranquility to his dominions, he endeavoured to ſecure his frontiers, and get poſſeſſion of a port that might procure him an eaſy entrance into the chriſtian kingdoms. Belgrade, the capital of Servia, was the key of Hungary, and commanded all the banks of the Danube.

This place was of equal ſtrength and importance, and Mahomet II, had attempted to reduce it in vain. The young ſultan led his troops in perſon againſt it, and notwithſtanding the moſt vigorous reſiſtance, he made himſelf maſter of the city, and by that means opened himſelf a paſſage into the very heart of Europe.

Rhodes, that had been in the poſſeſſion of the knights of Jeruſalem for one hundred and fifty years, was an object no leſs conſiderable, but of a nature quite different. That iſland was ſituate in the very midſt of the Turkiſh empire. The knights were implacable enemies to the very name of a Turk. Their gallies made continual havock among the Ottoman fleets, and their harbours were ſo many ſecure retreats for all ſhips that were enemies to Conſtantinople. The honour of the ſultan and the ſafety of his ſubjects, prompted him to deſtroy that ſeminary of warriors, but the undertaking did not appear practicable.

Knights, who were the flower of the chriſtian nobility, educated with a horror and deteſtation againſt infidels, trained up from their earlieſt years in the midſt of wars and dangers, animated by the remembrance of ſo many victories; an iſland well fortified on all ſides, ſtored with ammunitions of every kind, and crowded with ſoldiers. Nature, art, courage and induſtry, with the double enthuſiaſm of religion and honour, theſe were the difficulties Soliman propoſed to ſubdue. Paſt examples ſeemed ſufficient to deter

him

him from ſo bold an undertaking; the whole Ottoman power lately failed in the attempt under his invincible uncle. All thoſe difficulties, however, ſerved only to animate the courage of Soliman. He reſolved to beſiege it, he directed the landing of the troops, and all the neceſſary works himſelf, was preſent at every attack, and by properly blending force with art, obliged the city to capitulate after a ſiege of ſix months. The glory he acquired by this conqueſt, received additional luſtre from his faithful obſervance of the terms of capitulation, from the humanity he ſhewed to the fugitives, and from the reſpect and tenderneſs with which he endeavoured to ſooth the misfortunes of the grand maſter. After having ſecured his poſſeſſions that bordered on the chriſtians, he reſolved to fortify his empire on the ſide of Perſia; and in order to leave no room for diſturbance behind him, he propoſed a truce to Hungary.

HUNGARY.

Hungary had not enjoyed a moment of tranquility during the reign of Ladiſlas. This prince, who would have been a moſt amiable man in private life, was however a weak ſovereign. He was attacked at the ſame time by his brother Albert, and the emperor Maximilian. His arms were ſucceſsful againſt the former, owing to the valour of his ſubjects, who fought with ardour for a maſter that was dear to them, and forced Albert to deſiſt from diſturbing Bohemia. A treaty made with the houſe of Auſtria, reſtored tranquility to

Hungary; and the monarch, who was beloved, tho' little eſteemed by his people, had the good fortune to end his days in peace. His two crowns deſcended to his ſon Lewis II. The courage of this young prince gave great hopes to the Hungarians, but his flatterers daily corrupted his ſentiments. It was to this king Soliman ſent a ſolemn embaſſy, to induce him at leaſt to ſuſpend their mutual quarrels, or exchange them entirely for peace and friendſhip. Lewis, entirely directed by the opinions of a cordelier, who by his intrigues had obtained a biſhopric, and the place of miniſter, followed the advice of that eccleſiaſtic, treated the offers of the ſultan with contempt, and diſmiſſed his deputies after he had mutilated and otherwiſe groſsly abuſed them. Soliman immediately entered Hungary with fire and ſword; made himſelf maſter of Buda, the bulwark of the kingdom, and revenged the injuries offered to his ambaſſadors, in the blood of the inhabitants of that city. In one campaign he ſubjected all Lower Hungary, ſent two hundred thouſand ſlaves to Turkey, and came up with the king, who waited to receive him in the plains of Mohat, with all the Hungarian nobility. His council repreſented to Lewis the danger of engaging with inferior forces againſt a ſultan, ſtimulated by revenge, who was the conqueror of Rhodes, and at the head of the beſt troops in the univerſe.

The advantages of delay were laid before him; he was told of the ſuccours that were on their march, and the proſpect there was beſides of de-

ſtroying

ſtroying the enemy, who was ſcarce able to ſubſiſt in a country that he had ruined himſelf. But all thoſe arguments had no effect, the mitred cordelier was for a battle, his opinion prevailed, and he gave the ſignal for engaging: twelve thouſand Hungarians covered the plain where the fatal battle was fought, the greateſt part of the nobility periſhed in the engagement, and the king who, hurried on by his courage, had raſhly thrown himſelf into the midſt of the ranks, was trampled under the horſes feet, carried away by the fugitives, and at length drowned in a pit, where his body was found ſome days after. The ſultan, now triumphant, rapidly over-ran the kingdom, which he ravaged with flames and ſlaughter, and carried away an infinite multitude of ſlaves.

The Hungarians, who felt all the miſeries of a foreign war, were at the ſame time expoſed to all the horrors and exceſſes of domeſtic broils. The unfortunate Lewis had left no heirs of his own family; Ferdinand of Auſtria, who had married his ſiſter, ſeized upon Bohemia as his inheritance, and claimed Hungary on the ſame pretence. The nation in vain inſiſted upon the right they had to elect their own chiefs. Ferdinand, with the ſupport of his brother Charles V, was in hopes of ſilencing the laws. The nobles were at firſt obliged to comply, but ſoon endeavoured to revive their pretenſions; and in an aſſembly, that conſiſted of the greater part of that body, they elected for their ſovereign John Zapolſki, who was already

already Vaivode of Tranſilvania. John, being perſecuted by his rival and incapable of reſiſting all the forces of Auſtria, was under the neceſſity of invoking the aid of a powerful protector. Soliman flew to ſupport the chriſtian who implored his aſſiſtance, and in a few days all ſubmitted to the king whom he protected. The Germans were defeated, and Hungary given up. John was crowned in the midſt of the capital, in the preſence of the ſultan, who would not receive the leaſt mark of homage for ſo important a ſervice. And, not content with re-inſtating him, he determined likewiſe to avenge his cauſe, and at the head of his beſt troops entered Auſtria, defeated all who attempted to obſtruct his march, and laid ſiege to Vienna. The powers of Europe, who imagined they already ſaw a maſter in this new conqueror, ſuſpending their animoſities, and uniting their forces together, obliged the ſultan to quit his prey. He retreated, however, like a conqueror; nor did he return to his frontiers until he had ſecured the crown on the head of the prince he protected. At the ſame time, Barbaroſſa, the admiral of his fleets, made the Turkiſh flag terrible in every ſea, plundered Italy and Spain, ſubjected the coaſts of Afric, made Tunis ſubmit to the yoke, and raiſed a kingdom for himſelf in Algiers, which he placed under the protection of his maſter. Soliman, in the midſt of thoſe expeditions in Europe, reſumed his deſigns againſt Aſia.

PERSIA.

PERSIA.

PERSIA has been the theatre of the greateſt revolutions. The death of Seich-Edar was revenged, and Ruſtan fell by the hands of his own particular friends. This crime was followed by a general confuſion, and the kingdom, without any real maſters, had tyrants who mutually butchered each other. Iſmael, carefully educated by the friends of his family, and heir to his father's abilities, with much more ambition, imagined the hour was come to repair his misfortunes, and to make the ſect of his anceſtors triumphant. Taking advantage of the public confuſion, he revived the doctrine of the ancient Iſmael, rouſed the former adherents of that ſect, gained over new proſelytes, and when he ſaw himſelf at the head of a numerous body of diſciples, joined force with art and eloquence. Armenia and Meſopotamia were rapidly ſubjected, and he puſhed his ſucceſs to the very centre of the kingdom. He then inforced the claims he derived from his grandmother, the ſiſter of the famous Uſſum-Caſſan. Perſia conferred the ſceptre on him more on account of his virtues than the rights of his family, and univerſally acknowleged him for her ſovereign. The throne acquired new luſtre under this philoſophic monarch. While he watched over the felicity of his ſubjects with paternal care and attention, his arms extended the frontiers of the empire; and the ancient monarchy of Cyrus ſeemed to revive again under the deſcendant of Ali. Selim I, jealous of the riſing greatneſs of ſo powerful

powerful a neighbour, attempted to check his progreſs; but that victorious ſultan was ſtopped on the banks of the Euphrates, his armies were defeated, no leſs by the prudence than the valour of his enemy, and he was obliged to go elſewhere in ſearch of conqueſt.

SOLIMAN, eager to avenge his father, reſumed his projects againſt the Sophi. He led his troops from the banks of the Danube to the borders of the Euphrates, and laid ſiege to Bagdad, the ſtrongeſt and moſt important city of Aſia. The ſurrender of this place opened the way into Meſopotamia; he ſubjected, with incredible, celerity all the provinces that lay between the two rivers; he then croſſed the Tygris, and dividing his army, led one part in perſon towards the north, and proceeding from one conqueſt to another, ſubjected the whole courſe of the Oxus. The reſt of his forces, under the command of his baſhas, penetrated into the ſouthern provinces, and extended the authority of their maſter as far as the Gulph of Ormus. Soliman, now laden with ſpoils and trophies, returned to Bagdad, where he was crowned king of Perſia, and received the homage of a part of the Eaſt. In the midſt of thoſe triumphs, he was informed that the Venetians, taking advantage of his abſence, and ſeduced by Charles V, had attacked his ſhips and menaced his poſſeſſions: He immediately flew back to Europe, and the face of affairs totally changed on his appearance. His fleets recovered the ſuperiority, and fourteen iſlands were taken from the republic. Inſulted in her own gulph, trembling

even

even for her capital, ſhe begged for peace in ſuppliant terms, which was only granted by a treaty that left Soliman in poſſeſſion of his conqueſts, and obliged her beſides to pay him three hundred thouſand ducats.

New diſturbances aroſe in Hungary and recalled the ſultan to that country. John, tired of a war in which he had to encounter ſuch powerful enemies, who reproached him for an alliance which they conſidered as a crime, concluded a peace with his rival, by which he agreed to divide the kingdom into two parts, and to ſecure to Ferdinand the future poſſeſſion of both. The mortifications which the prince of Tranſilvania ſuffered from the indignation of his ſubjects, on account of this ſhameful agreement, having hurried him to the tomb, the Auſtrian inſiſted on the conditions of the treaty; but the Hungarians, perſuaded that the honour of governing them was not a patrimony to be diſpoſed off at the will and caprice of any perſon, elected and crowned the ſon of John, who was born but eight days before the death of his father. Ferdinand having raiſed all the forces of his family, in order to cruſh the queen and her infant, that princeſs, following the example of her huſband, ſtretched her ſuppliant hands towards Soliman. The ſultan appeared once more on the banks of the Danube, in the glorious character of protector of the widow and orphan. The ſucceſs of his arms correſponded with the juſtice of his cauſe; he took Buda a ſecond time, defeated one of the generals of Ferdinand, triumphed over Ferdinand himſelf, purſued

him

him to Preſbourg, and ſent his baſhas to carry terror to the frontiers of Auſtria. Having made an alliance with the French at the ſame time, he gave orders to Barbaroſſa to beſiege Niece, while Piali, another Turkiſh admiral, drove the Spaniards from the coaſts of Afric, and gained a battle by which ten thouſand chriſtians were reduced to ſlavery.

AFRICA.

AFRICA was the theatre of rapid and bloody revolutions, which the contention between two religions produced. Tripoli, after being taken from the Moors by the Spaniards, paſſed under the yoke of the Turks, who introduced the Alcoran, then returned to Charles V, who made a preſent of it to the order of Malta, and afterwards fell under the power of Soliman, through the valour of Sinan, a famous renegado, who drove out the chriſtians. Tunis, that ſuffered the like viciſſitudes and equal havock, remained in the poſſeſſion of the chriſtians, who loſt Bugia, and preſerved Oran. The vaſt empire of the Miramolins, that was divided into various kingdoms, was invaded by the people of Caſtile and the Portugueſe, who in their alternate victories and diſappointments laid waſte that fertile country, while the tyrants, who aſcended thoſe thrones to which they were raiſed, and from whence they tumbled by their crimes, appeared only to ſtain them with blood.

ALGIERS felt ſtill greater ſhocks; and, having called in Horuc and Scheredin Barbaroſſa to her relief,

relief, ſuffered every calamity from the inhuman tyranny of the two barbarous brothers. They butchered her princes, violated her wives and daughters, maſſacred the citizens, and loaded her with chains more oppreſſive than thoſe of Caſtile. Horuc ſtrangled with his own hands the deſcendant of the ancient ſovereigns, and erected a throne for himſelf, which he dyed with blood, and ſurrounded with aſſaſſins. He was, however, a great captain as well as a cruel tyrant. He drove out the Spaniards, extended his frontiers, ſubjected the neighbouring ſtates, and carried terror into the very heart of Africa. He was afterwards ſurpriſed, defeated, and ſacrificed by a body of chriſtians, whom the Algerines invoked in their deſpair; but his death ſerved only to aggravate their miſery. Scheredin immediately ſeized the ſceptre of his brother, avenged his death by the moſt ſplendid victories abroad, and by rivers of blood, with which he deluged the city; and when he was no longer able to reſiſt the rage of a people, made deſperate by ſufferings and oppreſſion, he called in the fleet of Soliman, and delivered up the ſtate to that prince, who appointed him his admiral. Barbaroſſa, in this character made his name famous in the Mediterranean, plundered Spain and Italy, aſſiſted France, triumphed over Venice, and counterbalanced the ſucceſs of Doria. The eyes of Europe were fixed upon thoſe two famous men contending with all the forces of Auſtria and Turkey. They were widely different in birth and manners. Barbaroſſa was a man of the loweſt extraction, and contaminated

minated with every ſpecies of crime; Doria to an illuſtrious origin, added the ſplendor of the moſt exalted virtues; they reſembled each other in capacity, valour, and experience, and were both worthy to command the forces of the two moſt powerful emperors in the world.

REFLECTIONS.

RELIGION.

THE revolution almoſt general that was made in religion, claims our firſt conſideration. The popes, abſolute in ſpiritual matters, had for eight centuries triumphed over the enemies that ventured to oppoſe them. Emperors, kings, people, power, enthuſiaſm, and knowlege all miſcarried in attacking their authority. A monk, however, in the obſcurity of his cell, having ventured to wage war with that throne, ſtripped the ſovereign of one half of his empire, and ſhook the other.

LEO X, having reſolved to build the church of St. Peter at Rome, opened the treaſures of indulgences. Some covetous men farmed out thoſe indulgences in Germany, and employed the Dominicans to enhance their credit and value. The Auguſtinians, jealous at this preference, perſuaded a young monk of their order, to avenge their cauſe; he ſucceeded, and his ſucceſs occaſioned one of the greateſt revolutions in civil and religious eſtabliſhments that is to be found in the annals of religion.

LUTHER.

LUTHER was born at Iſleb, in Saxony of obſcure and indigent parents. Poverty firſt directed him to the cloiſter, ſuperſtition determined his choice. Terrified by a clap of thunder that ſtruck one of his friends dead at his ſide, he threw himſelf into a convent of Auguſtinians at the age of twenty-two. He had great induſtry, penetration and vivacity, and was more over bleſſed with the ineſtimable talent of a nervous and flowing elocution. He purſued ſtudy with ardour, and in a little time diſtinguiſhed himſelf. His order, who looked upon him as a very valuable member, made him profeſſor of philoſophy at Wittemberg, and ſoon after beſtowed the profeſſorſhip of divinity on him by which he acquired the greateſt reputation. He was now revered as the oracle of his country, on account of his learning and eloquence, when his brother monks ſingled him out to cry down the new preachers. The young friar flattered by a diſtinction ſo honourable, and charmed likewiſe with ſo favourable an occaſion of ſignalizing himſelf by bold and new ideas, he undertook the dangerous taſk with joy. Real ſcandal afforded him too juſt grounds for cenſure. The indulgences which the church of Rome diſpenſed as the fruits of the blood of God, were become an article of trade that was expoſed to public ſale with the moſt ſhameful indecency, and the true intention of them entirely perverted. They were no longer preſented as graces capable of remitting the temporal puniſhment due to crimes that had been effaced by the ſacrament; they were proclaimed

as celeſtial favours of themſelves, efficacious to aboliſh the moſt ſinful enormities, and no room was left for ſalutary terrors. Thus the conſolation afforded to penitential virtue was metamophoſed by ignorance and avarice into a grace applicable to vice, to which it became an encouragement.

The eloquent Luther inveighed loudly againſt thoſe maxims, and reviving the true principles of religion, leſſened the ardour of the purchaſers. Inflated with this ſucceſs, he went ſtill farther, and attacked the very doctrine of indulgences: then carried away by the fire of his imagination, he expoſed, with the moſt poignant ridicule, the opinions of the ſchool-divines: his boldneſs augmenting in proportion to his ſucceſs, he attaked the moſt revered doctrines, the hierarchy, the biſhops, and even the pope himſelf. Rome deſpiſed him at firſt, and thought it ſufficient, to threaten, but ſeeing the ſtorm increaſe, ſhe let looſe her anathemas, and demanded the criminal that he might ſuffer for his temerity. The reformer incenſed at his condemnation, and protected by his country and his prince redoubled his boldneſs. Armed with the torch of hiſtory, he was in hopes of totally ſubverting the altars of the Vatican and the throne of the pontiff. His daring hand, dragged aſide the curtain, and expoſed thoſe venerable myſteries which Europe had till then held in adoration. The favourite precepts of the church were attaked, the hierarchy was ſhaken, and the moſt auguſt ceremonies treated with contempt. The emperor called the innovator before him, to give an account of his opinion; Luther appeared,

peared, ſpoke with boldneſs, deſpiſed the menaces that were uſed, and even in his way back, made a great number of proſelytes. The clergy now took the alarm and preſſed Charles V to imitate Sigiſmond, who, notwithſtanding the protection he had given, ſacrificed John Huys; but Charles having rejected with horror ſo criminal a breach of his word, a conſpiracy was formed againſt the life of the man whom they conſidered as a dangerous diſturber. Luther concealed himſelf in a fortreſs, and uniting ſentiments of revenge with the ideas of ambition, he employed himſelf in his retreat in reducing his innovations into a regular ſyſtem. According to him "The author of chriſtianity inſtituted no more than two ſacraments, baptiſm and the Lords-ſupper. The reſt are mere inventions dictated by intereſt, and adopted by ſuperſtition. The invocation of ſaints is not only uſeleſs but ſinful, in giving an honour to creatures that is due only to the firſt of all beings. Prayers for the dead are a ſnare laid for the faithful, and purgatory on which they are founded is a chimera invented by the avarice of the clergy.

It is an error to believe that the ſubſtance of the bread vaniſhed from the ſacrament of the altar; Jeſus Chriſt does but introduce himſelf in it in a manner incomprehenſible, which Luther called impanation. Confeſſion is a ridiculous ceremony; which being inefficacious to remit paſt tranſgreſſions, too frequently occaſions new ſins. It is neither by that, by the mortifications preſcribed by the church of Rome, by repentance

built upon fear, which ſerves only to make hypocrites, or even by any ſpecies of good works that men can be abſolved from ſin and puniſhment. By faith alone we are juſtified, that is to ſay, by a lively confidence in the mercy of the Redeemer, and an intimate perſuaſion that the merits of his blood are applied to us. But that blood has been ſhed for thoſe alone that are predeſtinated; God, who has no other object in view but the felicity of that ſmall number of elect, has prepared from all eternity the infaillible means of their ſalvation, as he has likewiſe pre-ordained the inevitable damnation of the reſt."

LUTHER had not more reſpect for the government of the church than her doctrine. The pope appeared to him no more "than a biſhop like the reſt, who had no authority beyond the limits of his dioceſe of Rome. The juriſdiction of prelates had its ſource entirely in the choice made by the faithful. The greater part of thoſe diſtinctions among the differents orders of the clergy were repreſented as the effects of hateful tyranny, and the opulence of eccleſiaſtics treated as a criminal uſurpation. Celibacy was ſhewn to be a ſource of abuſe; the vows of religious orders contrary to nature and the goſpel; and the cloiſters were ſo many pits where idleneſs ſwallowed up poſterity." By this way of reaſoning the reformer ſet open the gates of the monaſteries, made prieſts marry, plundered the clergy, exhorted princes to ſeize upon part of the riches of the church, and pointed out the moſt rational method of applying the remainder. He adviſed them to employ

employ it in founding colleges, erecting hoſpitals, encouraging induſtry, and repairing the public roads. Thus Luther by prudently blending wiſe alterations with the new opinions he endeavoured to eſtabliſh, more effectually conciliated the protection of his ſovereign.

The moment at lenght arrived when he could appear again with ſecurity, and Saxony received him with tranſports of joy! He then enjoyed the moſt flattering ſatisfaction to the founder of a ſect. He ſaw his country eſtabliſh his doctrine and adopt his reformation. From Saxony his opinions got footing in Heſſe, and ſhortly after were introduced into ſome of the northern parts of Germany. A number of diſciples joined him, and aſſiſted him with their voice and their pen. Melancton, the principal ſupport of the ſect, was the moſt learned man in Germany, one of the greateſt genius of his times, and the moſt peaceable ſectary that ever exiſted. Luther having now triumphed over his enemies, quietly indulged thoſe inclinations which he had before carefully concealed. He threw off his habit and married a young nun, for whom he long had a paſſionate affection. Three ſons, the pledges of their mutual love, completed his joy. His proſperity increaſed every day. Zealous apoſtles ſpread the doctrine of their maſter all over Europe. Bucer, who quitted the cloiſter as Luther had done, introduced it into the imperial cities near the Rhine. Olaus made it triumphant in Sweden, his native country, with ſuch rapidity, that in one year all that kingdom ſubmitted to it. The great

Guſtavus received the new worſhip, and the wiſe Chriſtian III made it the eſtabliſhed religion of Denmark. At the ſame time England and a great part of Switzerland renounced the church of Rome.

THE new doctrine gained ground in Scotland, and began to inſinuate itſelf into France. Luther ſaw all Chriſtendom attentive to his voice; one half of Europe divided from the throne of his enemy; whole kingdoms adopting his opinions; a powerful party conſulting him, and receiving his deciſions with reſpect and veneration. In the midſt of his triumphs he died quietly without fear or remorſe, expreſſing the pleaſure he felt at having changed the world.

FROM the boſom of lutheraniſm Europe ſaw iſſue a ſwarm of ſects who, agreeing to reject the ſupremacy of the pope, differed in almoſt every other point. Zuinglius, a rector in the canton of Zurich, was the firſt who attempted to alter the ſyſtem of Luther, and make it more conformable to philoſophy. "Senſible of the abſurdity of impanation invented by the Saxon, he rejected it as well as the doctrine of catholics. Denying the real preſence entirely, he maintained, that it was no more than a type or figure of the body and blood of God, a ſimple image of his laſt ſacrifice, a pious ceremony that renewed the memory of his love and goodneſs. The doctrine of juſtification by faith appeared a dangerous tenet to the Swiſs divine, it was attributing every thing to a vain ſpeculation, and deſtroying the merits of action. He conceived that

that it would be taking from religion one of the moſt important advantages, if its precepts were not connected with the intereſt of ſociety. Far from leſſening the merits of good works, he laboured to enhance their value; but he honoured with that name only ſuch actions as made us really uſeful to mankind. This manner of reaſoning lead him to a bold opinion. He believed that God rewarded virtue in the order of nature as well as in that of grace. Therefore Socrates, Ariſtides, Cato and all the great men of antiquity who had endeavoured to reſemble their creator upon earth, did not ſeem to him unworthy of enjoying his preſence. The doctrine of predeſtination was rejected as equally contrary to religion, reaſon and morality. God the father of mankind, who cheriſhed them with equal affection, had deſtined them all for eternal happineſs, and given them the neceſſary means to obtain it. If ſome of them ſhould not attain the end of their creation, it muſt be their own fault. They alone were the artiſts of their own ſalvation or ruin. He was of opinion however, that thoſe torments would have an end; between the eternity of puniſhment and the weakneſſes of a created being, he found a diſproportion that ſhocked mercy and juſtice. He adopted the opinions of Luther with regard to the monks, the celibacy of prieſts, and the poſſeſſions and authority of the elergy: he ſubverted the whole hierarchy, and conſidered paſtors as no other than ſpiritual magiſtrates, elected by the people, from whom they borrowed their

authority. He aboliſhed the greateſt part of the ceremonies of the church, and would allow of no worſhip, but what was as ſimple in the practice as in precept."

ZUINGLIUS by preaching this doctrine with zeal and vehemence, ſupported by the pureſt morals, made almoſt as many proſelytes as he had hearers. The clergy endeavoured to arm the hands of the magiſtrates againſt the new divine; but all they could obtain was a public conference, at which the government ſhould aſſiſt, hear both parties diſpute the cauſe, and follow the religion of him who ſhould produce the moſt powerful reaſons. Zuinglius appeared, and whether he was ſuperior to his opponents, or that the magiſtrates had been already pre-poſſeſſed in his favour, his doctrine however prevailed; the Roman catholic worſhip was aboliſhed by a public edict, and the religion of Zuinglius became that of the ſtate.

THE cantons of Berne and Baſle quickly adopted this reformation; and the new preacher acted the ſame part in Switzerland, that Luther had done in Germany. But religion ſoon armed the hands of this wiſe people. The cantons that had preſerved the ancient, form of worſhip advanced, in order to puniſh thoſe who had forſaken it. Zuinglius thought it his duty on this occaſion, to ſhare the danger with his countrymen! as he had been their apoſtle ſo he was reſolved be to their defender. He put himſelf at the head of his diſciples, led them in perſon againſt the enemy, and died ſword in hand in a battle which proved unfortunate to his party.

His

His party however recovered; the reformation continued in three cantons, and gained over others.

CALVIN.

Calvin, the rector of a parish in the diocese of Noyon, adopted the sentiments of Luther at first, which he soon after joined to those of Zuinglius; and at length, out of the two systems formed a particular one, by which he flattered himself that he had made the whole perfect, because he had carried every thing to extremes. "The basis of his doctrine is, that we are to seek for religion no where but in the gospel; every other source appears impure and dangerous. He does not scruple to acknowledge but that those holy writings are in some places difficult to be explained. In order to under stand them he would have us consult nothing but our reason: every christian has a right to determine the sense of the divine word." Upon this principle Calvin subverted, and made innovations agreable to his fancy; introducing, however, nothing scarce of his own, he contented himself with carrying the systems of others to excess. "He rejected the real presence, the hierarchy and ceremonies with Zuinglius; and going beyond the doctor of Zurich, he abolished even the most rational rites." He banished all ornament and pomp from the churches, and his sour disposition would even persecute the fine arts and all pleasures. From Luther he borrowed the doctrine of predestination, but he carried the severity of that principle still farther. God, according

cording to him, without any regard to merit, governed by his own will alone, has from all eternity, deſtined a ſmall number of men for eternal happineſs, and doomed all the reſt to ſupreme and endleſs miſery. The former, as being the ſole object of boundleſs goodneſs, muſt of neceſſity be virtuous and happy; the reſt, obnoxious to the divine hatred, even before they have an exiſtence, are hurried into crimes by an irreſiſtible power, and into torments that are the puniſhment of them. Their beſt actions, even thoſe that diſplay the moſt reſpectable virtues, are odious in the eyes of the Supreme Being, and become acts of reprobation.,, According to this horrid ſyſtem God ſeems to delight in leading us from one abyſs to another. He commands, nay he forces us to the commiſſion of crimes, in order to have the pleaſure of puniſhing them.

Calvin publiſhed this doctrine firſt in France. Under the protection of the queen of Navarre, ſiſter to Francis I, he founded a church in the ſouthern provinces; but terrified by the bloody edict of the monarch, he was obliged ro fly from his country and retired to Geneva. He was driven thence by the intereſt of the clergy, but afterwards recalled and appeared in triumph. The city in a abody, after a long deliberation, baniſhed her biſhop, received the new doctrine, and imagined ſhe had recovered a double freedom.

Calvin now the object of public veneration, reigned over that riſing ſtate; he made it the centre of his party who, from the extremities of Europe ſolicited his opinions, and received them

as

as oracles. In this exalted degree of power, he diſplayed the moſt auſtere manners, and gave an additional weight to his precepts by the moſt rigid virtue; but he diſgraced it by atrocious cruelty, which made him the implacable enemy of his opponents. Though his maxims tended to encourage a freedom of thought, yet he was an abſolute tyrant over that liberty, and threw unfortunate divines into the flames for no other crime, but that of extending his principles.—He died in Geneva, revered as an apoſtle and a founder of that republic.

THE favourite principle of Calvin, which authoriſed every chriſtian to take his own reaſon for judge, was too flattering to ſelf-love not to be adopted; but it neceſſarily gave riſe to a number of ſects. The firſt it produced was that of the anti-trinitarians.

SERVETUS, the Spaniard, was at firſt a phyſician, and diſplayed in that profeſſion, a knowledge ſuperior to the age in which he lived. He ſhewed invention in that difficult ſcience; and there are many reaſons to imagine that he had, at leaſt ſuſpected the circulation of the blood. He unfortunately commenced divine and followed the new reformation, Nor did he ſtop there, but hurried on by the paſſion of a diſputant, he controverted the divinity of Jeſus Chriſt, and attacked all the myſteries. To avoid the perſecution of catholics, he retired to Geneva, where he was in hopes of finding a protector in Calvin. Whether ſtimulated by jealouſy at ſeeing another ſurpaſs him in innovations, or by ſome private reſentment

ſentment againſt the Spaniard; Calvin, however declared againſt him in the conſiſtory, of which he abſolutely governed the decrees. Servetus, in vain, ſhewed clearly that his enemy had authoriſed the boldeſt opinions; in vain he proved, that the perſecution raiſed againſt him juſtified the intolerant ſpirit of which proteſtants accuſed their opponents; Calvin, without any reply, ordered him to be burnt alive. His doctrine, however, ſurvived him. Gentilis, the Italian, became a martyr to his zeal in ſpreading it. Lelio Socin, of the ſame country, and his nephew Fauſtus, improved it. They publiſhed it in a moſt engaging ſtyle, and gave their names to that daring ſect who, by aboliſhing all myſteries, attempt to ſubject chriſtianity to the lights of human reaſon. "God," according to the Socinians, being a beneficent father and equitable judge, does not impute to innocence the ſtain of guilt and ſin, he never made men culpable for the fault of Adam; they are reſponſible for their own crimes alone. He is too juſt to judge mankind by laws which it would be difficult for them to know; he has impreſſed on their hearts the principles of natural religion, which comprehends every duty; but as paſſions are too apt to lead reaſon aſtray, he has ſent wiſe and virtuous men, whoſe examples and precepts might excite them to return to him. The moſt perfect of thoſe wiſe men was Jeſus Chriſt, a pure and upright man, born in ſubjection to all the laws of humanity, but bleſſed with all the gifts of heaven, a ſublime example of talents and virtues, and who has

has explained the eternal laws in the goſpel which he has left us. That book, though too frequently altered by ſuperſtition, ſtill contains, however, what is really neceſſary for us to know. It is an admirable ſyſtem of morality, that makes of all mankind one immenſe family united by love and charity."

The anabaptiſts, in fine, appeared and carried their pretenſions much farther.—"A total independence both in ſpiritual and temporal matters, was the baſis of their ſyſtem. To this they added a contempt for baptiſm, which gave the name to their ſect." The greater part of thoſe who devoted themſelves to this religion, were peaſants, mechanics or ſlaves. Seeing the whole burthen of ſociety fall upon them, while a ſmall number of the rich enjoyed with pride and oſtentation, the fruits of their labour and diſtreſs, they fancied they had a right to inſiſt on the equality of nature, and revenge the uſurpations committed againſt them. It was not by ſtudied harangues, learned reſearches, or ſpecious arguments they endeavoured to increaſe their ſect, but by fire and ſword.

Twenty thouſand enthuſiaſts, by flames and devaſtations, attempted to deſtroy all that ſubordination which preſerves the harmony of ſociety. Fauſtus and Muncer, of Saxony, were the authors of that terrible confederacy, and eſtabliſhed it in Weſtphalia. John of Leyden, a journeyman taylor, ſucceeded them, who in contradiction to his own immediate principles, made himſelf king of his diſciples, maſter of the city of Munſter,

ſter, and reigned with no leſs oſtentation than tyranny. The rabble crouded round him, laid Germany waſte from the Elbe to the Rhine, and at length periſhed with their king, by the hands of thoſe nobles whom they endeavoured to exterminate. From this furious ſect proceeded the quakers, whom we ſhall ſee appear in England in the ſucceeding century: they are a peaceable ſet of people, as different from the anabaptiſts in their manners as they are like them in their principles. They believe that natural equality, is an enemy to all violence, and is eſtabliſhed by patience, charity and meekneſs.

Such were the principal ſects that appeared in the beginning of the ſixteenth century, and ſuch were their doctrine at that time; this has ſince been altered. The Lutherans and Calviniſts, at preſent, reject that ſhocking and rigid doctrine of predeſtination, which makes a meer machine of man, and a tyrant of the Deity.

What could be the motives that encouraged ſo many innovators? By what means did they acquire ſuch aſtoniſhing ſucceſs?

If we believethe proteſtants, their founders were men divinely inſpired, who had no other view but to reform crying abuſes, and re-eſtabliſh the goſpel in its original purity. But if we give ear to the firſt writers who oppoſed them, the pretended reformers were monſters, whom pride and licentiouſneſs armed againſt the church. Without conſulting any other guide but equity, let us condemn vice wherever we find it, and applaud virtue in whatever ſect its bright image appears.

It does not ſeem as if true and virtuous zeal ever inſpired either Luther or Calvin. Vanity began the work, temper continued, and intereſt completed it. Luther was a violent man. His diſpoſition, and the pleaſure of being remarked, prompted him to oppoſe the received opinions. There is reaſon to think, that at his firſt ſetting out, he had no thoughts of proceeding ſo far. Succeſs inflamed and inſpired him with the deſign of making himſelf the leader of a party. This ambition and the dread of the court of Rome, carried him far beyond what he intended. The idea of quitting a ſtate of life which probably was grown irkſome, became a ſecond motive; we have very little reaſon to doubt this when we reflect on his marriage, which the celebrated Eraſmus calls the ſcandal of the reformation. Calvin whoſe morals were irreproachable, was influenced by pride, which flattered him with the pleaſure of ſeeing himſelf at the head of a numerous ſect, obedient to his authority: he was morever prompted by his gloomy and auſtere diſpoſition; this character is viſible in his horrid doctrine of predeſtination, and in the barbarous ſeverity he exerciſed againſt thoſe who ventured to contradict his opinions. Zuinglius ſeems to have had purer motives. He believed probably what he taught; we have room to judge this from his opinions, which, tho' criminal in the eyes of religion, are, however, capable of ſeducing a good mind, by the appearance of reaſon and the meekneſs in which they are dreſſed. He likewiſe had the generous ambition of ſerving his country; his heroic death is a proof of this.

Sttong

Strong conviction ſeems to have acted upon the ſocinians; if they erred, their errors perhaps, proceeded from their paſſion alone for reaſoning, a paſſion, the moſt excuſable of all others. We muſt however acknowlege that among the founders of thoſe ſects, there were men reſpectable for their learning and morals. We may allow a ſort of eloquence, ſome erudition and intrepidity, to the Saxon divine; to the apoſtle of Geneva let us grant morals, wit and logic: we ſhould do juſtice to Melancton, whoſe writings can not be read without eſteem, or his life without ſentiments of affection.

The ſucceſs of the reformation had been prepared, Wicliff and John Huys had already ſcattered the principles of it; Luther had but to revive them; circumſtances were favourable. The church of Rome had countenanced abuſes which ſhe herſelf confeſſes; it was no difficult matter for that eloquent monk to turn thoſe ridiculous practices againſt the doctrine itſelf. The minds of men newly emerged from barbarity were in a ſtate of fermentation that inflamed their curioſity and paſſion for new reſearches; the ſlavery in which they had been held, appearing the more odious, on account of its weight and oppreſſion, they were ready to break their fetters, and overleap the bounds of moderation. The new doctrine was advantageous to every body; to the monks whom it freed from a ſevere yoke, which they had imprudently embraced at an age when they were incapable of knowing themſelves; to the people whom it eaſed of a conſiderable

number

number of cuſtoms that were either expenſive or troubleſome; to the poor who, in the ſuppreſſion of the monaſteries, found hoſpitals to receive and ſupport them at the public expence; to the great who ſhared in the ſpoils of the rich and magnificient churches of Germany; and to ſovereigns, in fine, who ſhook of that exceſſive authority which had ſo often deſtroyed their own, and ſaw with joy the diadem avenged for the inſults offered to it by the papal crown. The revival of learning was favourable to the new opinions; aſſiſted by the lights of criticiſm, men ſearched in to the monuments of antiquity, and inſpected the manners of the primitive church. By ſhewing the different adminiſtration of former ages, the government of ſucceeding times was made odious. Unfortunately, ſacred erudition and abilities were entirely on the ſide of the reformer. The Ekiuſes and Cocleueſs, who defended the ancient worſhip we refar inferior to the vigour of Luther, the logic of Calvin, or the elegance of Melancton. Printing was another cauſe of the ſucceſs of the ſectaries; the preſs that multiplied their writings, preſerved them from the vigilance of their enemies who endeavoured to deſtroy them. The ſpirit of perſecution, by which the adherents of Rome were animated, was likerwiſe beneficial to the cauſe of their adverſaries. The blody edicts that Francis, Charles, Henry and his daughter iſſued againſt the reformers, the fires which they kindled, the tortures they invented, the puniſhments that were inflicted in moſt parts of Europe, contributed

to harden the minds of people, and make them glory in deſpiſing torments. The conſtancy of the heroes of the ſect, produced numberleſs proſelytes. The character of the popes who reigned in thoſe days tended greatly to promote the ſucceſs of their enemies. The debaucheries and cruelties of Alexander VI, the wars and intrigues of Julius II, the voluptuous life of Leo X, the errors and misfortunes of Clement VII, the injuſtice committed by Paul III in order to raiſe his family, and the crimes of his worthleſs ſon which he connived at thro, a blind affection, all helped to leſſen the reſpect people had for the pontiffs; a part of the church thought themſelves juſtifiable in oppoſing thoſe chiefs who ſeemed unworthy to govern them.

The firſt remedy that was thought neceſſary to ſo many evils was perſecution. Having already given a ſketch of the ſeverity with which it was urged we ſhall now add one of thoſe barbarous ſcenes that is a diſgrace to humanity, muſt ſhock every feeling breaſt, and is ſufficient to make every pious man ſhudder at the exceſſes to which a miſguided zeal for religion may ſometimes lead mankind.—

A remnant of the Vaudois lived on the mountains that ſeparate Provence from Dauphiny, they might be wedded to ſome heterodox opinions, but they were mild, peaceable, obliging and induſtrious, living in poverty and virtute. The parliament of Aix condemned nineteen of theſe poor people to the flames: and not ſatisfied with that ſeverity, they ſent Oppede, their firſt preſident,

preſident, and Guerin the attorney general, to proſecute that ſect. Hiſtory can not furniſh an inſtance of barbarity exerciſed with ſo much coolneſs and deliberation. Thoſe magiſtrates deſtroyed whole villages, ſome were burnt, others levelled to the ground, and thouſands of unfortunate people periſhed by their orders. One woman alone had the courage to riſe up againſt this inhuman violence. Madam de Cental carried the groans of ſo many victims to the feet of the throne, and ſolicited vengeance. The exceſſes committed by Guerin coſt him his head, a puniſhment too mild for ſuch a cruel barbarian! Oppede by his eloquence baffled the judges, and eſcaped with impunity.

A general council appeared a more efficacious and moderate expedient to all parties: Europe had long in vain ſolicited it; the popes, who dreaded the reſolutions of ſuch an aſſembly, continually delayed calling them together. Paul III, forced by Charles II, at length appointed the council to meet at Mantua, whence it was transferred to Trent. It continued eighteen years with frequent interruptions, and did not terminate till after the death of Charles.

The fruits of this meeting were very inconſiderable. The reformers who had ſolicited it ſo eargly, refuſed to attend. Inſtead of obeying the decree of that celebrated aſſembly, they made it a ſubject of ſatyrical remarks. They pretended that the proper forms had not been obſerved; that the pope by his legates and intrigues, had regulated every deciſion; that the ambition of

the cardinals, the timidity of the biſhops, their hopes and fears, and in ſhort all the little wordly intereſts had preſided at thoſe general aſſemblies of the church. Unfortunately the new divines were powerfully aſſiſted by the monk Frapaolo, that formidable hiſtorian, who painted the council in ſuch ſcandalous colours.—

RELIGIOUS ORDERS.

To the moſt prudent meaſures that were taken for defending the ancient form of worſhip, we may add the foundation of a new order; an order devoted to ſtudy and the inſtruction of others, to oppoſe the riſing ſchiſms, to ſpread religion in diſtant regions, to educate youth, to govern the conſciences of ſovereigns, and keep them in ſubjection to Rome. The reader will eaſily perceive, that we are ſpeaking of that famous body who, after the moſt extraordinary ſucceſs, has had ſuch a dreadful fall. Without pretending to determine whether this religious order of a new kind has been uſeful or injurious to ſtates; we cannot but allow that their inſtitution was then of the moſt important advantage to the church. Their rules, of which every article tended to make able and learned ſubjects, produced divines of diſtinguiſhed merit. They armed the firſt champions who attacked the enemies of the catholic religion with ſucceſs. Their labours changed the face of the conteſt, learning made the weapon more equal, and victory was at leaſt even on both ſides.

THE capuchins who were then introduced likewiſe, ſought a merit of a quite different nature: they

they hoped to recommend themſelves by adopting every thing that appeared ridiculous to the world. It is remarkable with regard to this ſingular order, that of her two founders, one became a fool, the other, having thrown off the penitential habit, deſerted the camp of the enemies of the pope, married, diſgraced himſelf by his debaucheries, and died a ſocinian. At the ſame time the moſt ignorant of all the founders, formed one of the moſt reſpectable orders that ever appeared.

THE Portugueze John de Dieu, or of God, was neither ambitious of the honour of employing his time in pious and barren contemplations, or of ſhining in learned debates; all he deſired was to devote himſelf to the ſervice of the infirm, and gave birth to that venerable eſtabliſhment which continues in every chriſtian part of Europe to exerciſe charity that firſt of all virtues, by which the order is known.

REFLECTIONS ON THE DISCOVERY OF AMERICA.

THE diſcovery of the new world is the moſt important event, not only of this, but of all other ages. It offers an extenſive field to the contempla tion of a philoſopher.—Two queſtions occur on this occaſion, whether America was known before Chriſtopher Columbus, and by what means it was peopled.—

WE have no reaſon to doubt but the ancients conjectured the exiſtence of another hemiſphere inhabited like this. The ſyſtem that places the ſun in the centre of the wold was eſtabliſhed in ſeveral ſchools of philoſophy; this naturally

led to the ſuppoſition of Antipodes. Virgil mentions them in very clear terms in the firſt book of his Georgics ſpeaking of that part of the globe oppoſite to that we inhabit, he ſays,—

Or when Aurora leaves our nothern ſphere,
She lights the downward heav'n, and riſes there.
And when on us ſhe breathes the living light,
Red veſper kindles there the tapers of the night.

THE erroneous arguments with which St. Auguſtin oppoſed this opinion are proofs that ſome people alſo defended it: the ſentence paſſed againſt it in the eighth century, is an argument that this truth was known even to the moſt ignorant ages. But it does not appear that America was otherwiſe known than by conjecture before the time of Columbus.—How in fact can it be ſuppoſed that mariners, without the compaſs, who ſailed with fear and caution from coaſt to coaſt, and who employed years in voyages that now require but a few days, ſhould venture to croſs that immenſe and tempeſtuous ocean that divides the two hemiſpheres? If a ſtorm or any other accident had thrown them into thoſe diſtant regions, by what miracle could they return, having no other guide but the ſtars, of which the leaſt cloud would intercept the view?

THAT Atlantic iſland, of which Plato has left ſo pompous a deſcription, and which is quoted toprove that America was known to him, is evidently no more than the bright fiction of that exalted genius, who always blended the charms of imagination with the profound ideas of philoſophy. The paſſage in Diodorus, and the circumſtance

cumſtance related of ſome Carthaginians, who had met with iſlands where gold grew, may be applied to the iſlands contiguous to Africa, where ſeveral mines of that metal have been actually found. As to the fabulous ſtories related in the time of Columbus, which ſuppoſed that navigator to have ſtolen the papers of certain Biſcayans, who had diſcovered the new world, and died ſoon after their return; it is eaſy to ſee that thoſe were the ultimate reſources of envy that endeavoured to gratify her reſentment againſt a great man, by turning the ſource of his glory into another channel.

The ſecond queſtion, by what means America was peopled, is much more difficult to anſwer. According to the opinion of ſome people, mariners from our continent accidently carried to the new world, had formed a colony, whoſe poſterity increaſed and covered half the globe. Others imagine that the extremities of both hemiſpheres had a communication on the north, ſo that the people of Aſia might paſs from one to the other, and introduce inhabitants into the northern parts of the ſecond, who, multiplying daily, ſpread gradually to the ſouth. Others in fine pretend, that the two continents were formerly but one, that a ſudden revolution in nature had ſwallowed up at once one thouſand eight hundred leagues that lay between Mexico and Guinea, drowned all the inhabitants, and by that dreadful diſaſter ſeparated the two hemiſpheres for ever.

In order to judge of the ſolidity of thoſe different opinions, we muſt firſt attentively conſider

the ſtate in which the firſt navigators who landed in America found the men, animals and plants. They ſaw an eſſential diſparity between thoſe men and Europeans. They diſcovered new animals that could not ſwim, either venomous or naturally voracious and wild: they found noxious creatures that exiſt only in hot climates. They met with plants quite different from, and others perfectly like ours. Secondly, we muſt be convinced of this truth, founded on every idea of ſound philoſophy, that the ſame cauſe that produced animals in America, produced men alſo; this is an indiſputable argument, and which added to the preceding remark, deſtroys the two firſt hypotheſis. If the inhabitants of the new world had been thrown there by accident, or landed with the view of ſettling, we ſhould meet with none of thoſe noxious animals. For how could they be introduced there? They could not get there of themſelves; we are ſpeaking of thoſe that cannot ſwim. Nay, how could the reſt, even that poſſeſs that faculty, traverſe above eight hundred leagues of ſea, lying between the Cape of Palms and Cape St. Vincent? If we ſuppoſe that they came from the northern extremities of Aſia, or the polar circles, we ſhould however ſee in the new hemiſphere none but thoſe ſpecies of animals that delight in cold countries, and can live in places covered with ſnow: ſurely animals that exiſt under the torrid zone only, would not have ſought the frozen north of Tartary, Greenland, Kamchatka, or any other part of the earth ſtill colder. No per-

ſon

ſon will ſay that they were carried thither, it is not uſual for men in their voyages to carry thoſe noxious creatures, which, far from endeavouring to propagate them, they ſeek every means in their power to deſtroy. The third ſyſtem is indeed more plauſible; but what can account for the aſtoniſhing ſilence of both worlds on this ſubject? Have either preſerved any tradition, a ſingle monument or token of this frightful calamity? Have not our anceſtors tranſmitted to us events of the moſt remote ages, that are infinitely leſs important and terrible? Beſides, how are we to account for the ſtriking ſimilitude that appears in the ſame climate between the European and American? We muſt in fact acknowlege, that none of the opinions received throws light on the queſtion; the eye of philoſophy can alone give us a little inſight into the matter.

REVOLUTIONS.

The ſouth of Europe afforded no ſtriking revolution. The great power of Charles V, was owing to alliances; that prince did no more than maintain it. He was however formed to occaſion remarkable changes; he had ambition, power, and the neceſſary abilities: three men kept him within bounds; thoſe were Francis, Soliman and Luther.

The North exhibited an important revolution in Sweden; the cauſes of it were viſible; the animoſity of two rival nations; the generous ſpirit of the Swedes, who diſdained to ſerve a foreign maſter; the ſeverity of the Danes, a diſpoſition that is ever fatal to thoſe who govern; and in

ſhort the abilities, valour, and greatneſs of ſou of Guſtavus were the true ſources of ſo rapid a change. The depoſing of Bajazet was very remarkable; he is the firſt ſultan that was dethroned by the janiſſaries. Amurat and Mahomet II, had themſelves paved the way for the misfortunes of that prince, by giving ſo much weight to a body of warriors whoſe ſole ambition was battles and victories. Thoſe invincible ſultans, conſcious of their own capacity to awe and reſtrain the ſoldiers under their command, were not fearful of giving too great an authority to the guards that ſurrounded the throne; but they did not ſufficiently foreſee that ſoldiers, educated in all the pride of martial ardour, would deſpiſe their maſter whenever he betrayed weakneſs or timidity; and they ſhould have conſidered that the courſe of ſucceſſion muſt inevitably produce irreſolute and puſillanimous ſultans. 'Twas thus the pretorian bands, who trembled at the frown of thoſe valiant emperors, under whom they were inſtituted, inſulted and deſpiſed the diadem of the Cæſars, when it bound the temples of a feeble and daſtardly prince.

VENICE had viſibly declined; it was not the treaty of Cambray, that gave the mortal blow to her greatneſs: her wiſdom which was ſtill the ſame, and never appeared in a more glorious light, than on that trying occaſion, had repaired all. The Portugueze alone, without attacking the republic openly, were her real enemies; the mariners of Liſbon, by doubling the Cape of Good-Hope, by triumphing in ſeas two thouſand

leagues

leagues diſtant from Venice, deprived the colours of St. Mark of the ſources of their glory.

POLITICS.

If Europe, in the diviſion we have now been reviewing, does not exhibit any of theſe ſudden revolutions and univerſal changes which ſo frequently happened before that period, ſhe owed this ſteadineſs and conſiſtency to the very conſiderable improvements that were made in politics. The different powers were then more connected and united, better acquainted with their reciprocal ſtrength and reſources, and had a clearer knowlege of their real intereſts. They kept a watchful eye over and counteracted each others motions, and by the union of ſeveral leſſer ſtates checked the deſigns of the great monarchs. Twas in that age the balance of power was introduced, that precious ſafeguard of Europe, which has preſerved her for three centuries from the yoke of two powerful families.

Ferdinand the catholic, Charles V, and the ſovereigns of Italy, the popes, and in particular the Venetians have diſtinguiſhed themſelves in that ſublime ſcience. The conduct of Julius II, and that of Leo X, with reſpect to the French, when they were become too formidable even to thoſe who had called them in, is worthy of admiration: that of the Venetians and Henry VIII, after the battle of Pavia, was a maſter-piece of wiſdom, to which Europe was indebted for her liberties.

Considerable changes now appeared in the different governments. The houſe of Auſtria gradually

gradually forged chains for Germany. Maximilian, who only wanted more connection in his deſigns, had artfully prepared for the ſubjection of the empire, by the manner in which he divided the circles. His grandſon having much greater abilities made a rapid progreſs in the work, and would have completely finiſhed it, had not hereſy roſe to the aſſiſtance of Germany. But notwithſtanding all the efforts of the Lutherans, the emperor gradually ſapped the foundation of liberty, and prepared the chains with which his ſucceſſors loaded the Germanic body; he ſtruck a deciſive blow in humbling the ancient and powerful houſe of Saxony, and ſtrewing the ſeeds of eternal diſcord among the different branches by transferring the electorate to the younger.

In France, the authority of the nobles expired under Francis I. The miniſters of that monarch continually laboured to humble them. The annihilation of the rights of thoſe, facilitated the ſubjection of the leſſer orders: the regulations made for levying and governing the troops ſubjected the military. The aboliſhing of the pragmatic ſanction effected the ſubmiſſion of the clergy, by obliging the heads of that body to turn their eyes to the throne, in order to obtain favours. England, that in former ages had ſpilt ſo much blood in order to cement her liberty, now ſeemed to have loſt ſight of that great object; that haughty and ſpirited nation crouched at the feet of Henry and Mary; and the parliament, which till then had been reſpectable defenders of the

rights

rights of the nation, became baſe inſtruments of the capricious humours of their maſters.

Sweden loſt the important privilege of electing her kings, and purchaſed the tranquility ſhe recovered under a hero, at the expence of her freedom. Spain, Florence, and Milan, preſented ſimilar ſcenes. In looking round the globe, the eye could now ſcarce diſcover any other objects but thoſe of people, bowing their necks to the yoke, and Geneva alone added one republic more to the world.

Great improvements were daily made in the laws, almoſt every ſtate eſtabliſhed admirable regulations for the reformation of ancient abuſes. The empire aboliſhed that cruel chamber which, though originally erected for the puniſhment of crimes, was become the protector of them, and exerciſed the moſt ſhameful tyranny all over Germany. In the midſt of the tumultuous reign of Henry, England enacted laws worthy of the moſt enlightened ages; ſhe reformed the dangerous abuſe of multiplying paſtures, turned the eyes of the inhabitants to agriculture, aboliſhed old laws that were deſtructive to the progreſs of mechanics, and made others favourable to commerce. Among a great number of wiſe regulations, France highly applauded that which aboliſhed the barbarous practice then in uſe, of delivering the laws and adminiſtering juſtice in a language unknown to the majoriry of the people; but at the ſame time ſhe ſaw the greateſt of evils introduced. Venality of offices and places, gave to gold the brighteſt

brigtheſt privilege of virtue, that of judging mankind.

NAVIGATION.

The world never produced more daring and famous mariners. In the Weſt we have ſeen Columbus, with unexampled boldneſs penetrate into ſeas till then unknown, and create in ſome ſort a new world. Balbao following his example, advanced towards one of the poles, which was not ſuppoſed to exiſt, and diſcovered a ſea three thouſand leagues in extent. Magellan attempted to make the tour of the world, and after the moſt aſtoniſhing labour and fatigue, ſurpriſed the Eaſt with a ſight of people, who reached their coaſts by continually purſuing a weſtern courſe. Death ſtopped him at the Philippines, and prevented the execution of his project; but Sebaſtian Cabot executed it a few years after; and Seville, whence he ſet ſail, ſaw that mariner return to her port after deſcribing the whole circumference of the globe. While the Spaniards were ſailing to the moſt remote parts of the Weſt, the Portugueze did not perform leſs prodigies in the Eaſt: Vaſco de Gamma, Alemeida, and Albukerque, penetrated to the extremities of the Indies; Siam Tunquin, the Moluccas, China and Japan were diſcovered.

It is eaſy to conceive that all the ſciences muſt have derived conſiderable advantages from thoſe diſcoveries. Geography, whoſe limits were confined for ſo many ages to a ſmall portion of the earth, now had both hemiſpheres ſtretched forth to her

her contemplation. The maps and charts till then without any perfect form, were covered with a thouſand new nations, and afforded ſurveys infinitely more exact.

Astronomy diſcovered new heavens, a new pole and new ſtars; a ſort of new creation was given to that ſcience in the world. Phyſic in warmer climates and a more vigorous ſoil, found powerful remedies till then unknown.—The eye of a legiſlator amidſt the multiplicity of whimſical laws that appeared among the new nations, diſcovered wiſe maxims that helped him to put a farther check on the violence of humans paſſions. The philoſopher enlarged the ſphere of his ideas; the view of ſuch a variety and number of people ſo different in their perſons, manners and opinions, raiſed his reflections and inſpired him with a generous and noble reſolution, that contributed to remove the bandage of prejudice from his eyes.—Thus every thing acquired new life and vigour in the world by the advantages of navigation. The epocha of Colombus was that of the greateſt and happieſt revolutions with regard to the human mind.

COMMERCE.

Commerce flouriſhed more than ever, but its centre was changed in the ſouth of Europe. The cities of Italy had the excluſive trade of the Indies, by means of Egypt, which was their ſtore-houſe. The Portugueze viſited thoſe regions themſelves and brought back their products in greater plenty. As they underſold the markets

of

of Italy, they ſoon acquired the trade of Europe, of which they left but a very ſmall ſhare to their rivals. And even that inſignificant branch they loſt by the fall of the throne of the Mamelucs, which made the implacable enemies of Venice maſters of Egypt. While the Purtugueze carried into their harbours the ſpices, drugs, diamonds and pearls of the Eaſt, the Spaniards were unlading in their ports the gold of Peru, the ſilver of Mexico, indigo, cocheneal, and all the products of the oppoſite hemiſphere. Thus Liſbon and Seville were become the greaſt magazines of the earth, the general rendezvous of all nations, and the richeſt cities in the univerſe. Lubeck and Hambourg continued to exerciſe the trade of the Baltic, by which they roſe to wealth and conſequence.

France and England, who afterwards became ſo famous for their navigation and commerce, had then made no progreſs in either. The former had a few trifling ſettlements; ſome veſſels belonging to the latter penetrated through the frozen ſea, found the road to Archangel, and gave riſe to the firſt maritime commerce with Ruſſia.

The mecanic arts and manufactures of every kind diſtinguiſhed Flanders and the adjacent provinces. Induſtry was the ſource of that incredible opulence, and aſtoniſhing population then viſible in thoſe parts. In Ghent, Bruſſels, Antwerp and Mechlin, citizens were to be found whoſe riches equalled thoſe of ſovereign princes. We have ſeen Charles, from conſidering the

inſurrection

inſurrection at Ghent as one of the moſt important affairs riſk his liberty, in marching through France, in order to haſten the ſubjection of that city, which formed a kind of ſtate in itſelf.

MILITARY ARTS.

War was now more than ever a real ſcience founded on rational principles. The great Gonzalva diſplayed all the reſources and powers of that ſcience, and by that means made the Spaniſh batallions the beſt troops in the world. Francis I, who had long been a victim to the ſuperior ſkill of his rivals in that dreadful art, profited by misfortunes, learned the ſecrets that had been ſo fatal to him, and communicated them to the French. Armies were upon a more regular footing all over Europe. Strict diſcipline eſtabliſhed order in the manœuvres, marches and engagements. Men had learned to employ the artillery to better effect on both elements. The ſtudy of the mathematics was applied to great advantage, both in the conſtruction and working of ſhips, as well as in the defence and attack of places. The moſt celebrated engineers then appeared who deſerved all the reputation they acquired. Peter of Navarre occuped the firſt rank among them. That illuſtrious Spaniard was the firſt inventor of mines; an invention terrible indeed at firſt view, but which in appearing to multiply the evils of mankind, actually leſſens them, becauſe, by ſhortening the duration of ſieges, it ſpares the lives of men.

SICHARD CIVILIAN.

The ſtudy of the laws was much improved. Alcat raiſed its ſplendor in Italy. Sichard, the German, rendered a moſt important ſervice to that ſcience, by recovering the eight firſt parts of the Theodoſian code. It is with ſome reluctance we commend the talents of Anthony Duprat, that enemy of his country, who applied his great talents and extenſive knowlege in making fatal innovations; he was the firſt that lowered the credit of his own nation, aboliſhed elections, which were ſo well calculated to produce great magiſtrates, and introduced the cuſtom of ſelling the privilege of ſitting in judgment on the lives, fortunes and honour of others. But France will always recollect with admiration, that virtuous reſtorer of the laws, Charles du Moulin, who, with Alicat, was the oracle of the age in that branch of knowlege.

Physic began to diſperſe the clouds that had eclipſed her brightneſs for ſo many ages. Men of eminent merit were convinced, that in order to cure the human body, it was neceſſary firſt, to be acquainted with the nature of it; and neglecting other vain ſyſtems, applied themſelves to anatomy. Veſſalius, the Flandrican, devoted himſelf to this ſtudy with ſuch labour and penetration, that he acquired the greateſt ſucceſs from the very firſt attempts. We have the fruits of his labours in his anatomical works, and eſpecially in his tables, where he deſcribes even the moſt minute veſſels with as much exactneſs

as

as was poſſible before the ſecret of injection was found out. This great man quarreled with the monks, was perſecuted by the inquiſition, and eſcaped the flames merely by the moſt open protection of the king. He was condemned, however, to make a pilgrimage to the holy land, was ſhipwracked on an iſland of the Archiepelago, where he periſhed for want.

Eustachius, who taught at Padua, did not throw leſs light on the conſtruction of the human body, by his excellent little pieces and diſcoveries, with regard to the organ of hearing.—Fallopius of Modena made himſelf ſtill more uſeful by his reſearches in the ſyſtem of generation. Poſterity, in giving the names of thoſe famous anatomiſts to the parts which they diſcovered, have, by that juſt gratitude, immortalized the inventors. Phyſic enlightened by thoſe diſcoveries, made the greateſt progreſs in every part of Europe.

England produced Linacre, the friend of Wolſey, whom he perſuaded to build the firſt college of phyſic in that kingdom; and Kay, who excelled in the obſervation of ſymptoms, and has left us a moſt elegant deſcription of the ſweating ſickneſs, ſo very remarkable for attacking the Engliſh alone in every part of the world. Spain had the unfortunate Servetus, who firſt conjectured one of the moſt important miſteries of the human body. France boaſted of Fernel and Silvius, whoſe lectures attracted crowds of hearers, while their writings were extolled by illuſtrious panegyriſts. Italy produced Roger de Carpo, who invented the real ſpecific for the

terrible diſorder then common. Humanity, in ſome ſort, owed her preſervation to him; as that infection, in attacking the ſource of generation, threatened the deſtruction of mankind. But the moſt illuſtrious was Fracaſtor, a phyſician, a philoſopher and excellent poet. The Latin language can ſhow nothing more exquiſitely written than his poem intitled Syphilis, wherein he deſcribes the ſymptoms and havoc of that ſhameful ſcourge, by which America was revenged on her deſtroyers.

The ſucceſs with which chymiſtry was cultivated continued to furniſh new remedies to phyſic, and new illuſions to her proficients. The Swiſs Paracelſus, without making any great diſcoveries became famous in that ſcience: he was one of thoſe ſingular men who make raſhneſs paſs for talents, and whoſe vanity impoſes on the weakneſs of the vulgar—Van-helmont the Flandrican, with the defects of his maſter, had real abilities; he greatly contributed to ſet aſide the violent practice of Galen, and to introduce more lenient remedies.

NATURAL HISTORY.

A man of excellent parts cultivated natural hiſtory; Geſner the German, made very judicious obſervations upon beaſts and other animals; his hiſtory of them has been the ground-work of thoſe produced in more enlightened ages. Fuſchius, the Bavarian, devoted himſelf to botany, nor have the labours of his ſucceſſors, in the ſame purſuits, rendered his hiſtory of plants uſeleſs.

Hermande

Hermando the Spaniard, embraced both objects, and enriched them with aſtoniſhing labours of a new ſpecies. He was ſent to America by his ſovereign, and after ſeveral years ſpent in ſtudying the plants and animals peculiar to that hemiſphere, at length publiſhed a deſcription of each in a moſt extenſive collection.

ASTRONOMY.

ASTRONOMY emerged from the chaos in which it was plunged, by the aſſiſtance of one great man. Copernicus, a native of Thorn, with a lofty and daring genius, rejected the ſyſtem of Ptolomey, which all the learned then conſidered as the only true one. Judicious and nice obſervations, a profound ſtudy of the laws of motion, and ſolid reflections, ſhewed him the folly of the arrangement given to the heavenly bodies. Alphonſus *the Wiſe*, had made the ſame complaints before, but the Poliſh philoſopher went beyond the Caſtilian monarch, and ſought the true order and arrangement. In looking back to the times previous to the age of Ptolomey, he diſcovered that there had been many philoſophers who had ventured to contradict the illuſion of the ſenſes, and the opinion of their contemporaries. They removed the earth from the centre aſſigned to it, and made it turn on itſelf, as well as round the ſun. This heavenly body, the common centre of light and heat, conſtantly remained in the ſame place, whence it enlightened and fertilized the planets that moved round. The fixed ſtars, that were motionleſs as the ſun, were placed at the

extremities of an immenſe ſpace by thoſe philoſophers. Copernicus revived this ſyſtem, ſupported it with new proofs, and ſo far improved it by his labours, that he merited a ſhare in the glory of the diſcovery. His opinions had at firſt but few followers, who were perſecuted by ſuperſtition, and the prejudices of the ſchools; the ſyſtem however prevailed, or rather it no longer deſerves the name of ſyſtem, for inſtruments that were invented ſoon after, and new obſervations have evinced, that the celebrated Polander did no more than conjecture the true arrangement of the univerſe. Walter the German, at the ſame time, made very profound reflections on the ſun, the planets, and the phenomenons occaſioned by the motions and phaſes of thoſe great bodies. He diſcovered the refraction to which the light of the ſtars is ſubject, and this important diſcovery gave riſe to the moſt rapid improvements in Aſtronomy. His countryman, Werner, determined the degrees of the obliquity of the ecliptic with more accuracy than any of his predeceſſors; while Fernel, a native of France, ventured to meaſure the extent of the earth, and his calculation nearly approached the truth.

MATHEMATICS.

True Mathematics now roſe as it were from the tomb. Arithmetic had been brought from Spain by the famous Gerbert; it was known, however, many ages before. Leonard of Piſa had lately enriched Europe with algebra, which he had been to ſeek for in Arabia. Some tranſ-

lations

tions of Euclid had kindled a paſſion for geometry; but thoſe notions were confuſed, unconnected, ill explained, confined to a ſmall number of half-learned men, who ſcarce made any other uſe of them but for ſuperſtition and folly. In the firſt years of the preſent epocha, the value of thoſe ſciences, which are the keys to ſo many others, began to be known. Men were ſenſible that the firſt ſtep to be taken, in order to revive them, was to endeavour to obtain good tranſlations of the ancients who had been famous in that branch. Not only the elements of Euclid, but the more profound works of Archimedes, Apollonius, and the Arabic doctors were tranſlated into almoſt every language of Europe, by the ableſt writers, who either added uſeful comments to thoſe tranſlations, or enriched their illuſtrious predeceſſors with new obſervations.

Lucas de Burgo advanced another ſtep ſtill more important and difficult. He united in conciſe and methodical treatiſes the principles of geometry, arithmetic, and algebra. He applied himſelf particularly to the laſt ſcience, whoſe ingenious operations guide men mechanically to truth, ſeem to give the human mind one ſenſe more, and lead reaſon blindly, in ſo certain and expeditious a manner, to concluſions which ſhe could not otherwiſe reach, with her moſt ſublime efforts and lights, but by ſlow and uncertain means. He explained the art in the firſt book that had been printed on the ſubject, and Europe looked upon him as the creator of it. There was ſcarce a country where people valued

themſelves upon the faculty of thinking, but produced ſome men ambitious of devoting themſelves to that ſtudy. The ſucceſs and improvements were ſo rapid, that from the very firſt attempts, ſcholars became maſters and inventors.

TARTALEA diſcovered cubic ſections. Cardan, who publiſhed thoſe ſolutions, enriched them with the diſtinction of the value of unknown numbers, both poſitively and negatively. Ferrari aſcended to the equations of the third degree. Bombelli worked upon his ideas, and improved moſt of them.

GEOMETRY, ſtrengthened by theſe powerful ſuccours, ſeemed to reſume new life and vigour. Commendin the Italian, the Sicilian Maurolicus, Pelletier the Frenchman, the Engliſhman Tonſtall, and the Portugueze Nonius, carried this ſcience to a moſt aſtoniſhing height, if we conſider the point whence they ſet out, though they were far from reaching the degree which it afterwards attained.

ARTS.

MECHANICS and Optics were ſcarce known in thoſe times; their improvement depended on ſound principles of natural philoſophy. This glorious ſcience was abſolutely miſunderſtood in the moſt eſſential points, and a prey to thoſe barbarous commentators of Ariſtotle, whoſe idle notions were as remote from the true ſenſe of that illuſtrious philoſopher, as the real order of nature.

HISTORY.

MEN of excellent parts devoted themſelves to the dangerous occupation of writing hiſtory. Thoſe marvellous machines with which the annaliſts of preceding ages had ſupported events, now began to diſappear. Writers ſought for the cauſes of facts in their genuine ſources, in the paſſions and intereſts of mankind. Guichardin of Tuſcany has left a hiſtory of his own times, in which knowlege, judgment, and taſte excite equal admiration; and which his countryman Adriani ſhewed he was worthy to continue.

MACHIAVEL and Bembo diſtinguiſhed themſelves in the ſame walk; the former by the hiſtory of Florence, where depth of policy is united with the beauties and elegance of ſtyle; the latter by one of Venice, in which partiality for his country has ſometimes influenced the pen of the hiſtorian. Elegance and beauty of diction would have juſtly ranked Paul Jove in the ſame claſs, if there were not ſufficient grounds to ſuſpect that his talents were made venal proſtitutes to intereſt and flattery.

WE ſhould not omit the Italian Paul Emilius, who obtained a ſettlement in France, through the liberality of the monarch, and wrote the annals of that nation; nor the German Sleidan, who was the firſt that, in an univerſal hiſtory, united learned criticiſm with immenſe labour and reſearches.

DEAD

DEAD LANGUAGES.

The dead languages and ancient monuments never had been ſtudied with greater attention; Goltzius revived the ſcience of inſcriptions and medals, ſo curious for all the literati, but of the moſt ſignal advantage to the hiſtorian in particular.

Vatable was the reſtorer of the Hebrew language, and revived the taſte for that ſtudy, ſo eſſential to the knowlege of religion. Reuchlin merited thanks from the learned for his generous oppoſition to that barbarous decree dictated by precipitant enthuſiaſm, which condemned all the books of the Jews to the flames.

Clenard made himſelf famous by a Greek grammar, which has been the ground-work of all ſucceeding works of that nature; and Turnebius, by the excellent lectures he gave on that idiom. The three Manuciuſes, ſo well verſed in the Latin tongue, ſo famous in typography, which they improved; Julius Scaliger, ſo well known for the ſeverity of his criticiſms, which he had the misfortune to confound with ſatire; and the unfortunate Dolet, whoſe learning and knowlege made him invidious to falſe zeal and hatred, by which he periſhed in the flames. All helped to reſtore the texts that had been altered, recovered valuable books, gave correct editions of them, and, by thoſe painful labours, the value of which are not ſufficiently felt, rendered the moſt eſſential ſervices to literature.

At the ſame time men of genius and capacity wrote in Latin, with an elegance and purity that would have been applauded in the Auguſtan age: ſuch was the eloquent biſhop Sodelet, whoſe life was a mirrour of conduct, as his writings were a model for diſcretion. Cardinal Bembo, an hiſtorian, poet and orator, in diſplaying the charms of Catullus, frequently indulged himſelf in the ſame licentiouſneſs.

Palingenes, who, in a poem of the Zodiac of Life, has ſhewn ſo much learning, philoſophy, and boldneſs; Sannazar, ſo well known for his paſtorals, and his fine verſes on Venice, which that city ſo nobly rewarded; Vida, who gained immortality by a poem, wherein the dryneſs of the precept is effaced by the charms of imagination; the prelate John de la Cara, who employed the moſt correct and brilliant ſtyle, in making an apology for the moſt monſtrous paſſion.

Buda cultivated every branch of knowlege, in which he gave proofs of his ſucceſs; he was an advocate and friend to learning near the throne. France, who called him her wonder, was partly indebted to him for the revival of litterature. The conqueror of Marignan, by his advice, built the royal college that was deſtined at the ſame time as the temple and aſylum of learning.

Sir Thomas Moore, that glorious chancellor of England, ſo celebrated as a ſtateſman, was not leſs diſtinguiſhed as a man of letters. He has left a monument of his taſte in his Eutopia, wherein

wherein he has traced the plan of a government founded upon virtue.

Erasmus eclipſed all the contemporary writers, and was looked upon as the wonder of the age. That famous man was born illegitimate, infirm and poor; carried from his very infancy into a cloiſter, he found means afterwards to break the chains he had formed. He had art enough to conceal his ſentiments, lived in the midſt of all the different ſects, laughed at them all, and was courted and perſecuted by them alternately. His life was one continued ſeries of voyages, travels, labours, hope and illuſions. France, Italy, Germany and England, ſaw and admired him, there was ſcarce a ſovereign in Europe that did not load him with applauſe, and make him the moſt ſplendid offers, yet he never enjoyed tranquility, and after all died poor: Rotterdam, the place of his birth, erected a ſtatue to his memory, after his deceaſe. Eraſmus, not ſatisfied with writing equal to the men of wit in the Auguſtan age, endeavoured alſo to think like them. True criticiſm owed its re-eſtabliſhment to him, and the ſublime ſcience of morality reckons him amongſt the number of its votaries.

LIVING LANGUAGES.

The Italian language was brought to perfection. Sannazar, ſo famous for his Latin poems, was no leſs ſucceſsful in the language of his country. Bembo likewiſe ſhewed equal beauties and elegance in the Italian; we cannot but regret

that

that Aretini has devoted his lively and ſpirited muſe to obſcenity and ſatyre; Follengio invented the burleſque, calculated to ridicule men into virtue and morality. Gravina in his epigrams, revived all the delicacy of Catullus. Triſſin, after proving unſucceſsful in epic poetry, reſtored the theatre; and in Sophoniſba exhibited the firſt regular tragedy, that appeared from the days of Seneca. Arioſto attempted an heroic poem, in which he diſplayed one of the moſt lively and fertile imaginations that ever exiſted. A compoſition in the whole whimſical but captivating; thoughts without order or connection, but bold, ſtrong and new: characters uncommon and even capricious, but ever intereſting and various, bright pictures, images without number, aſtoniſhing fire, moſt beautiful colouring, pompous diction and harmony of verſification raiſed that poet to the firſt rank. The greater part of Italy does not ſcruple to place him at the ſide of Virgil and Homer, and finds the ſame pleaſures in the Orlando Furioſo, that his contemporaries felt in the peruſal of that poem.

The Germans engroſſed by theological diſputes, paid no attention to the improvement of their language; the Engliſh made ſome efforts which, as they ackowlege, were of little efficacy. The French boaſted of ſome progreſs made, but they wanted taſte, and nothing could be done without that.

MENOT.

MENOT, the cordelier, whoſe eloquence was admired, debaſed his function by low and indecent jeſts. The myſteries of the paſſion and martyrdoms of ſaints were ſtill the only objects exhibited on the ſtage. Du Bellay, and St. Gelais, who were then ſo much eſteemed, ſcarce afford few verſes worthy of imitation. Clement Marot, ſo famous for his pleaſantry and misfortunes, had real talents; in his poems, we find ſimplicity, art and imagination; but he was miſled by the falſe taſte of his country, and by that means did not riſe beyond mediocrity. In an other age he would have ſhone with ſplendor. Rabelais had a reputation ſtill more extenſive. The celebrated rector of Meudon even now finds admirers. The fear of powerful enemies might have obliged him, perhaps, to deprive us of beauties, and diſguiſe his thoughts under allegories; but his groſs coverings are ſo ill made, ſo contaminated with indecency and buffoonery, that a reader of any delicacy can not allow him a place among the writers who have done honour to France. To the liſt of French poets we may add the name of Francis I. That prince had a taſte for poetry and ſucceeded in it; the verſes which he compoſed on Agnes Sorel are not inferior to any that appeared in his reign.

IT has been remarked, that the glory of letters ſtill follows that of arms; Spain, in the age we are upon, juſtified the obſervation. That bright nation had till then diſplayed none of its

its wit in compoſition. Some lives of ſaints and in particular that of St. Dominic, where the lowneſs of the thoughts vied with that of the diction, were looked upon as the maſter pieces of her poetry. There is ſtill to be ſeen a poetic conteſt between Carnaval; (Carnaval in popiſh countries means Shrove-tide when the people are allowed the liberty of going about the ſtreets in maſks.) and love, which was the delight of Caſtile in the reign of the brother of Iſabella. John Baſcan was the firſt to revive true taſte in his country. Struck with the beauties which, an ambaſſador from Venice at the court of Charles V, pointed out in the Italian poets, he reſolved to tranſlate their ſtyle, truth, grace and harmony into the Caſtilian tongue. His attempts prov-ſucceſsful; he compoſed ſonnets and eclogues in the manner of Petrarch, whom he took for his model. His generoſity was not inferior to his capacity; he had the greatneſs of ſoul to prefer the honour of his country to his own glory, and, with a ſacrifice the moſt difficult that can be offered by ſelf love, not only applauded the ſuperior genius of this rival, but even encouraged and aſſiſted at his triumph. By his endeavours Garcilaſo de la Vega went to Italy, and formed his taſte in the ſchool of the great maſters, who then adorned that country of arts. La Vega at his return to the banks of the Tagus charmed his country men; he is ſtill looked upon as the greateſt poet that ever Caſtile produced. People of falſe taſte murmured againſt him, but his merit at length triumphed, and the Spaniſh lan-

guage

guage was drawn from obſcurity and barbarity by the labours of his numberleſs imitators.

Leisure, the general conſequence of plenty, gave the ſame advantage to the Portugueze language. Ribero, Francis de Miranda and Michael de Cabedo diſtinguiſhed themſelves by paſſionate and harmonious verſes. The ſoftneſs that reings in their writings gave room to imagine in thoſe times, that this Spaniſh dialect was incapable of riſing to the vigour and height of the ſublime; we ſhall however in the ſucceeding diviſion ſee a celebrated man vindicate his country from that injuſt prejudice.

ILLUSTRIOUS WOMEN.

The taſte for letters was univerſally ſpread; the ladies were perſuaded that the improvement of the mind added new luſtre to beauty. Some of every rank and country appeared who were not ſatisfied with merely eſteeming learning, but thought it an honour to cultivate and improve it. Margaret of Auſtria, the illuſtrious aunt of Charles, who had been by turns dauphineſs of France, infanta of Spain and dutcheſs of Savoy, and who diſplayed ſuch ſingular talents in the government of Flanders, frequently compoſed in proſe and verſe; nothing is better known than the diſtich ſhe made when ſhe was near being ſwallowed up in a ſtorm.—Margaret of Navarre, the worthy ſiſter of Francis I, amuſed herſelf after the cares of governement, in writing the ſtories called in French the Cent Nouvelles, from which Fontaine has ſo frequently

borrowed

borrowed the ſubject of his tales. Lady Jane Gray was not leſs famous for her birth and charms, than for her learning and capacity; having deſcended from the throne in order to mount the ſcaffold, on that tremendous occaſion her thoughts were taken up with the writings of Plato, and ſhe endeavoured to conſole herſelf with that philoſopher in the proofs he has left of the ſoul's immortality. The three ſiſters of the Seimour family honoured the tomb of the queen of Navarre by Latin verſes, in which they celebrated the learning of that princeſs. Aloiſia Sigea, the honour of Toledo, who has been reproached with the looſeneſs of Petronius, wrote with the ſame elegance as that wit of antiquity. Victoria Columna, wife to the marquiſs of Piſcairo was no leſs diſtinguiſhed for learning, than her huſband was for war. The learned in general extolled the talents of Lucretia Gonzagues, and the world was at a loſs which to praiſe moſt, the wit, beauty, or virtue of that princeſs.

FINE ARTS.

The fine arts flouriſhed in Italy; ancient Greece and Rome had never, perhaps, carried them to ſo high a degree of perfection. Bramanti drew the plan of that church at Rome, which was looked upon as one of the wonders of the world, and much ſuperior to that of St. Sophia, that was till then the admiration of the world. Michael Angelo improved his plans, crowned that magnificient ſtructure with an aſtoniſhing cupola, where boldneſs and taſte conſpire to charm the ſpectator's eye. The moſt ſuperb temples, ſump-

ſuous and delightful gardens ſprung, up as it were, under the hand of that glorious artiſt; Serlio, Vignoli and Primatici following his ſteps, embelliſhed all the cities of Italy with maſterpieces of architecture.

The marble ſeemed to breathe under the chiſſel of the ſame Michael Angelo, his art deceived the moſt zealous admirers of antiquity, and made them take ſtatues which he produced, for the works of Praxiteles and Phidias. Braſs and copper were animated in the crucibles of Volterus, and the hardeſt metals were made to receive the moſt delicate touches and impreſſions.

Painting triumphed in four ſchools, all excellent and diſtinguiſhed by their ſeveral taſtes and ſtyles. The Florence ſchool, that Vinci had already made ſo illuſtrious, reached the ſummit of glory by the pencil of Michael Angelo, who with the ſquare and chiſſel, had performed ſo may prodigies. He conveyed to the canvaſs that boldneſs of deſign, that ſtrength of expreſſions, thoſe ſublime and terrible beauties, and that fire and enthuſiaſm with which he inſpired his pupils. Sarto, Roſſo, Baccio, and Sebaſtian Salviati, who were formed by his leſſons or works, followed the ſteps of their great maſter, and ſhared the honour of his labours.

The Venetian ſchool received from Giorgion Titian and Tintoret, that magic of couloring by which it is diſtinguiſhed. Lombardy borrowed from Corregio thoſe ſoft and delicate touches, which made him be called the painter of the graces. Raphael raiſed the Roman ſchool ſtill

higher;

higher; he taught correctneſs of deſign, richneſs of arrangement, a juſt expreſſion, and ſublimity of ideas. He was an admirable painter, was honoured as the firſt in his profeſſion, and perhaps never had an equal; with a heart full of tenderneſs and ſenſibility, he was too fond of pleaſure, his exceſſes hurried him to the tomb in the flower of his age. Julio Romano, Parmeſan, Primatici, Polidorus Caravagio, Francis Perini, and Jane d'Udino, who were brought up under that great painter, became in ſome ſort his rivals, and completed the triumph of the ſchool in which they were formed. Engraving multiplied the beſt pieces of thoſe maſters; that art was then carried to perfection by the gravers of Mark Anthony and Durer.

FLANDERS had her artiſts likerwiſe, who if they are cenſurable for the ill choice of the objects, merit however the greateſt praiſes for their accuracy in painting after nature; and the juſtneſs of their colouring.—Heemſkirk, Mabuſe, John of Leyden and Van Horley have left us monuments, the value of which time has conſiderably augmented. We have others more precious ſtill in the pieces of Quintin, the famous ſmith of Antwerp, whom love made abandon the forge, in order to manage a pencil, which rapidly produced maſterpieces. Albert Durer erected a ſchool in Germany, the place of his birth, which the genius of Holbein made famous from its firſt infancy.—If a wrong taſte has made this laſt ſchool inferior to the reſt, the laborious and finiſhed touches of its painters, have raiſed the value and eſteem of their works.

OTHER nations had not then produced any remarkable artiſts. In France appeared only Goujon, the celebrated ſtatuary, whoſe precious works adorn the capital. But if the fine arts acquired perfection only in Italy, a taſte for them was however ſpread through the principal parts of Europe. The architects of Florence and Rome being invited to the courts of Francis, Henry and Charles, there ſhewed in what true beauty conſiſted. The Gothic ſtyle gave way to the Roman manner. Architecture, ſculpture, and painting, improved and directed by thoſe illuſtrious ſtrangers, flouriſhed every where; Paris, Fontainebleau, St. Denis, Hampton-Court and Madrid, exhibit glorious monuments of the progreſs of arts in thoſe times.

PRINCES PROTECTORS.

THOSE ſucceſſes were doubtleſs owing to the great, happy and fertile genius which then prevailed in Italy; but this genius was powerfully aſſiſted by the honours confered on it by the greateſt princes. The haugthy Julius II, ſo terrible to crowned heads, was all condeſcenſion before Michael Angelo; he did not ſcruple to make him the moſt open reparation for the ſlighteſt offence: the great Soliman, in the midſt of his triumphs, ſent that artiſt marks of the veneration with which he inſpired him. A cardinal of the firſt dignity and conſequence deſigned to give his niece in marriage to Raphael, and thought it an honourable alliance for his family.— That painter was the friend of Leo X, and the pontiff intended to adorn him with the purple. Francis I conferred

ferred the greateſt honours on Primatici, Roſſo, Vignole, and Veltirus. He made one ſuperintendant of all the buildings, another counſellor of ſtate, and treated them all with the moſt flattering diſtinctions. He made his courtiers reſpect them, and he uſed frequently to repeat, that genius raiſed men to a level with the moſt exalted birth.

Holbein being invited to London, which he enriched with maſter pieces, in one of thoſe impatient moments of enthuſiaſm, had affronted an Engliſh nobleman. The lord inſiſted upon exemplary ſatisfaction, or otherwiſe he ſhould take vengeance himſelf: *Beware of doing him the leaſt injury*, replied the terrible Henry, *if any thing happens to him your head ſhall anſwer for it; I can make an earl of the loweſt peaſant in my kingdom, but I can never make an Holbein.* Charles V, made a merit of collecting the works of Titian, and thought he added new glory to his various triumphs, by making himſelf uſeful to that great painter. Arts could not then fail to proſper under thoſe great protectors. 'Tis from the throne that fall the foſtering dews which cheriſh thoſe tender plants, or riſe the ſtorms that blaſt and tear them up by the very roots.

To judge of this age by ſome bloody executions which ſuperſtition commanded, and by the frightful havock that tyranny committed in America, one might be apt to imagine that the manners and temper of the times were cruel; but we are not to judge of men in general by particular acts of barbarity. The conquerors of

the new world were, for the moſt part, deſperate vagabonds, whoſe crimes drove them from the old. Unable to bear the ſalutary yoke of the laws in Europe, they went to regions remote from the eyes of their countrymen, in order to give a looſe to thoſe exceſſes which they could not indulge at home. They were in ſome ſort the dregs of the nation, which Spain thought herſelf happy to get rid of. It would be ridiculous to impute to a whole people the crimes of ſome individuals. Beſides policy did not a little contribute to the miſeries of the inhabitants of Mexico and Peru. People imagined they ſaw a prodigious advantage in the preſervation of the rich countries which they had conquered. They could ſee no hopes of keeping poſſeſſion ſhould they ſpare the lives of ſo many people who were ſubdued only by the ſuperior arts of Europe, and who would not fail to recover quickly from their ſurprize. Being reſolved therefore to maintain their conqueſts, they ſaw no other means of effecting their reſolution, but in deſtroying the ancient poſſeſſors.

The bloody ſacrifices made by enthuſiaſm were the effects of thoſe prejudices which had not been yet extinguiſhed; they proceeded likewiſe from the revenge and ambition of the great, who were intereſted in that pious inhumanity. Alas! there is no age in which the barbarous ſpirit of enthuſiaſm has not exhibited ſimilar objects. But if we conſider the whole picture which the epocha of Columbus diſplays, and compare it with preceding images, we ſhall viſibly perceive

a g-

a general change, no leſs happy in the taſte than the manners of the people. Wars were become leſs barbarous, treachery more uncommon, poiſon was not ſo often employed, revolutions were leſs frequent, and ſuperſtition had loſt much of her violence and power; ſhe was no longer ſeen thundering from the top of a ſacred throne, altering the world according to her caprice and inclination, commanding crimes under the banner of the croſs, arming ſubjects againſt kings, and ſons againſt fathers. Men may in vain apply ſophiſtical arguments, confound times, and make general deductions from particular facts, in order to ſhew that the progreſs of crimes keeps pace with the improvement of arts; whenever we view with an attentive and ſteady eye the whole chain of events, we ſhall ſee that ignorance is the conſtant companion of vice, and that virtue always flouriſhes in proportion to the improvement of arts and ſciences.

END OF THE SEVENTH EPOCHA.

EIGHTH EPOCHA.

PHILIP II.

From the year 1556 *to* 1610 *of Chriſt.*

THE houſe of Auſtria, now the firſt power in Chriſtendom, was divided in two branches; the elder had Spain, the younger poſſeſſed the empire.

THE throne of Spain, beſides the extenſive country of that name, governed alſo in Europe the two Sicilies, the Milaneſe, the ſeventeen provinces of the Low Countries and Franche Comté: in Africa, Tunis and Oran, with their territories, the Canaries and ſome of the Cape-Verd Iſlands; in Aſia the Philippines, the Iſlands of Sundi and a part of the Moluccas; in America, the empires of Mexico and Peru, New Spain, Chili and almoſt all the iſlands ſituate between thoſe two continents.

THE troops of Spain, were the firſt in Europe; their armies, reckoned invincible, were compoſed of veterans trained in actual ſervice, inured to fatigue, and animated by the remembrance of various triumphs. They were commanded by the dukes of Alba and Savoy, both pupils of Charles V, who had been brougth up in his camp, and were already diſtinguiſhed by their victories. Her immenſe fleets which, in a manner,

ner, covered the ſeas, had been taught to contend with Barbaroſſa, and to triumph under Doria: the mines of Potoſi and Chili lately opened, were in full vigour, and enriched Cadiz with an annual tribute of twenty millions ſterling.——

Philip II, the only ſon of Charles V, was maſter of all thoſe poſſeſſions: he had recently married the queen of England, and the paſſionate fondneſs of the princeſs for a huſband, who made no return to her affection, gave him the command of all the forces of her kingdom. This monarch had neither the valour or activity of his father, nor that affability which made the emperor the idol of his ſubjects; but he had all his ambition, and ſupported it with thoſe talents and vices which make tyrants ſo formidable. His penetration and capacity were extenſive, his heart was bad and callous to every feeling of nature and friendſhip: he was full of duplicity and ſuſpicion, and had ſo little regard for the blood of mankind that he never ſcrupled to ſet it flow when ever he thought it conducive to his intereſt; he had neither virtue or religion, yet affected all the littleneſs of ſuperſtition, in order to conceal his crimes; in ſhort, Philip, was one of the moſt dangerous princes that ever exiſted.

The empire had lately conferred the ſceptre on Ferdinand, the brother of Charles and uncle of Philip. This prince united Auſtria to Bohemia, and diſputed the poſſeſſion of Hungary. Born with inferior talents, but ſuperior virtues to his predeceſſor, he endeavoured to appeaſe the troubles

troubles that agitated the body of which he had been elected head. Religion was the cauſe of bloody conteſts that ravaged Germany. Saxony, Heſſe, Brandenbourg, the Palatinate and almoſt all the imperial cities had embraced the reformation, which they were ready to defend with the laſt drop of their blood; while the other parts of the empire, devoted to the ancient worſhip, exerted all their efforts to deſtroy the new forms which they deteſted.

France was the ſecond power in Chriſtendom, and ſeemed formed to be the bulwark of public liberty againſt Philip and Ferdinand. His kingdom was extenſive, fertile, populous and abounded with ſoldiers. The ſpirit of chivalry, that occaſioned ſuch violent commotions, during the feudal adminiſtration, had ſurvived that irregular government, and now inſpired the nobles with no other ſentiments but thoſe of candour, courage and the love of glory.

Henry II, who preſided over this monarchy, did not ſhow himſelf unworthy of ſucceeding to Francis I. If he had not all the genius of his father, he had however a portion of his greatneſs of ſoul; he was lofty, courageous and liberal even to profuſion; he encouraged pleaſures and the arts at his court, while two celebrated men commanded his armies. Ann of Montmorency decorated with the dignity of conſtable, (equal to the rank of capitain general in England) was diſtinguiſhed for his heroic valour; Francis of Guiſe was illuſtrious for his talents, and one of the greateſt men of the age. This hero had lately

lately defended Metz with a capacity and reſolution that excited the admiration of Europe. Three important cities had been newly added to the French poſſeſſions; Artois ſubmitted to Henry; and the valiant Briſſac, conqueror of Piedmont, maintained the authority of his maſter at Turin.

ENGLAND had loſt the reputation and conſequence ſhe enjoyed for ſo many centuries. The love of liberty ſeemed now extinguiſhed in the breaſts of the people; that of glory was vaniſhed. A ſhameful pliancy and ſubmiſſion prevailed in the parliaments, the courage of the troops was entirely fallen, the navy ſinking to decay, and commerce neglected; a weak and cruel woman trampled on that once ſpirited nation, who had made ſo many kings tremble. Fanaticiſm, armed with the authority of the throne, exerciſed all the rigours of perſecution, tyrannical ſtupidity, drained the treaſury, and ruined the people to enrich a ſtranger, who treated them with diſdain.

SCOTLAND did not enjoy the preſence of her young queen, who had been educated at the court of France, and ſeemed likely to make her kingdom a province of that powerful monarchy. This country was a prey to a multitude of oppoſite factions, and ſuffered all the horrors of a religious war. The rage of the clergy againſt the proteſtants, and that of the proteſtants againſt the clergy threw the whole ſtate into confuſion, produced the moſt atrocious ſcenes, and made a jeſt of the authority of the regent; and that princeſs,

princeſs, deſcended from the houſe of Lorraine, followed the maxims of the Guiſes, and conſtantly adhered to France.

The authority of the popes was entirely changed; Lutheraniſm had ſtripped them of the greater part of Germany and two kingdoms in the north. Calviniſm had deprived their ſee of Geneva and a part of Switzerland; England was preparing to ſhake them off, and the many ſectaries that were increaſing in France, ſeemed to menace a ſimilar revolution in that kingdom. The popes were not only weakened as pontiffs, but as ſovereigns likewiſe; ſhut up between the Milaneſe and the kingdom of Naples, they were ſtreightened on all ſides by the power of Spain, and enjoyed but a precarious reign even in their capital.

Peter Caraffi, by the name of Paul IV, was ſeated on the tottering throne of the church. This pontiff, in the moſt enfeebled and decrepit ſtate of body, preſerved a violence of ſpirit that would have excited aſtoniſhment in the impetuous ardour of youth. He was implacable in his reſentment againſt his enemies, and perſecuted them with fire and ſword; haughty with his ſubjects, who deteſted him for his ſeverity, and arrogant to kings, for he imagined their crowns ſubject to his authority; his projects were unbounded, his notions confined, and he was intoxicated with ambition in the very midſt of weakneſs. This old man, who, after the example of Paul III, had flattered himſelf with the hopes of procuring a ſovereignty for his nephews,

hated

hated Philip, for refuſing to co-operate with his views, and impatiently whiſhed for an oportunity to puniſh him.

The wiſe Coſmo, by his virtues, revived in Florence the happy times ſhe had enjoyed under his anceſtors. Indebted as he was to the houſe of Auſtria for the ſovereignty he enjoyed, and intimidated mereover by the proximity of the vice-roy of Naples, he was attached to Philip by the double ties of gratitude and intereſt.

Hercules of Mantua was too near the Milaneſe not to follow the impreſſions of the court of Madrid; Octavius of Parma, whom Charles V had ſtripped of Placentia, had no hopes of recovering it but by endeavouring to conciliate the favour of his ſucceſſor. Genoa, delivered by the ſervices of Doria, was governed by his councils; Philibert III, who had been ſtripped of Savoy and Piedmont by France, had no reſource but in the protection of Spain; and all thoſe princes were cloſely attached to Philip, and obeyed him rather as vaſſals over whom he reigned, than as ſovereigns that he protected.

The Venetians repaired the misfortunes of their late wars with Soliman, by a wiſe condeſcenſion for that ſultan, at the ſame time they kept upon fair terms with the two rival families; they openly adhered to a ſtrict neutrality, but, were ſecretly friends to France, as being the weaker, and, by the diſtance of her dominious, leſs dangerous.

The Swiſs, with leſs policy, but equally deſtitute both of fear and ambition, had no other

deſire

deſire but to enjoy tranquility on their mountains and to ſignaliſe their courage among ſtrangers, with equal fidelity for all powers.

PORTUGAL ſaw her commerce, her colonies and proſperity daily increaſe. John III was on the throne, declining in years, adored by his ſubjects, beloved by is neighbours, in peace with all the world, and the moſt happy monarch of his times.

SWEDEN continued to recover from her miſfortunes, during the wiſe and triumphant reign of Guſtavus. Denmark forgot the exceſſes of Chriſtian II, under the mild adminiſtration of Chriſtian III. Poland acquired victories every year; while Sigiſmund governed, the Ruſſians dreaded his arms, and the Turks reſpected his frontiers.

BOHEMIA, ſtripped of all her rights, was now no more than a province of Auſtria. Hungary was the theatre of three different factions who mutually ravaged her. Ferdinand poſſeſſed the weſtern part; Soliman held the other, while John Zaolſki, whoſe mother had preſerved Tranſylvania, endeavoured to recover the crown conferred on him by the voice of the nation.

TURKY was at the ſummit of her glory. The coaſts of Africa had received her yoke, or ſubmitted to a tribute; part of Perſia obeyed her authority; from the Euphrates to Mount Atlas, all were ſubject to her laws, or in dread of her power; and the fleets of Soliman appeared on the coaſts of the Mediterranean, as well as the banks of the Indies.

A TASTE

A TASTE for polite learning univerſally prevailed in Europe. The fine arts triumphed in Italy; the ſublime ſciences began to dawn; and it might have been expected that this century would ſhine with equal luſtre with the moſt glorious ages of the world, if fanataciſm, that broke out on all ſides, had not clouded thoſe hopes with apprehenſions of dreadful ſtorms.

SPAIN, FRANCE, AND ITALY.

A TRUCE of five years, ſettled by the management of Charles V, had given ſome repoſe to Europe, and ſeemed to promiſe a laſting peace. A pontiff aged eighty, revived the animoſity of nations, and kindled the flames of a general war. Paul IV, impatient to be revenged on Philip, ſent his nephew to Henry II, in order to perſuade him to take up arms. Montmorency, in vain, urged him to reject the ſolicitations of an ambitious old man; Guiſe, who ardently wiſhed to diſplay his talents, prevailed upon the monarch to aſſiſt the pope, and hoſtilities were renewed. Henry, who always found a faithful ally in Soliman, was joined by that ſultan and the pontiff againſt Philip. The latter, who, notwithſtanding the indifference he ſhewed for his conſort, ſtill preſerved an abſolute empire over her, found means to perſuade England to unite her forces with his. Thus Italy, Hungary, and the frontiers of France, were, at the ſame time, in a flame. Tranquility, however, ſoon revived in Italy, where the misfortunes of Henry, the defeats of Guiſe, and the abilities of the duke of

Alba

Alba, obliged the pontiff to abandon the monarch, whoſe aſſiſtance he had implored.

The ſpectacle was more intereſting in Flanders, Philip appeared there in perſon, at the head of a numerous army; the operations were directed by Philibert of Savoy, a prince of great abilities, which he was particularly deſirous of exerting, on this occaſion, from motives of reſentment againſt the oppreſſors of his country.

The flower of the French troops advanced to meet the Spaniards, and a ſplendid train of nobles followed the conſtable; the king was preparing to join them, and the city of St. Quentin became the general rendezvous of thoſe numerous forces. Philibert had laid ſiege to that place, which was defended by the gallant Coligny, the nephew of the conſtable, and the hopes of the proteſtants, whoſe party he had embraced. The prodigious efforts of the inhabitants, animated by that young hero, confounded Philip, and he already began to dread that he ſhould be under the neceſſity of raiſing the ſiege in a ſhameful manner, when the impetuous Montmorency appeared under the walls, and offered battle. The courage diſplayed by the French was uſeleſs, on that unhappy occaſion; the capacity of the Spaniſh general triumphed over the raſh valour of the conſtable; a bloody defeat threw Montmorency into chains, and deſtroyed the greater part of the nobles under his command. The taking of the city, after this fatal event, made an immediate change in the ſituation of affairs.

France, now uncovered on all ſides, thought herſelf undone, and Paris trembled with apprehenſions of ſoon ſeeing the enemy at her gates. Charles, who was informed in his retreat, of the ſucceſs of his ſon, no longer doubted of the deſtruction of his ancient rivals, and the French monarch was preparing to fly for ſhelter to ſome remote province.

Guise, who had been recalled from Italy, was the only perſon that did not deſpair of preſerving the ſtate. He collected, with incredible diligence, the ſcattered remains of the vanquiſhed army, and when, by judicious marches, and continual ſkirmiſhes, he had given a check to the ardour of the enemy, and revived the courage of the French, he ſuddenly turned towards Calais, and, after a vigorous and well concerted attack, deprived the Engliſh of a place that, for three centuries, had given them a ready entrance to the continent.

Guise, covered with immortal glory, and an object of admiration to all Europe, by his unexpected ſucceſs, was now become the ſoul of the councils and armies; he repulſed Philip, and reſtored France to the equality ſhe enjoyed before the battle of St. Quintin. The war might have been purſued with more vigour than ever, all ſeemed to promiſe a continuation of victory, or, at leaſt, a glorious peace. But, in the midſt of theſe well-founded expectations, the world heard with aſtoniſhment that Henry ſuddenly dropped his arms, and ſubmitted to a treaty that ſtripped him of conſiderable poſſeſſions. Piedmont

mont and Savoy were reſtored to Philibert; the places that had been conquered in Flanders were given up to Philip; the intereſts of the king of Navarre were abandoned; the allies of Henry ſacrificed, and even Soliman, the moſt faithful of all, was forgot in the peace of Cambray.

Among all the friends of Philip, the Engliſh alone were neglected, and that people ſaw, with rage and indignation, that a war ſo ruinous and expenſive, had been of no other uſe but to deprive them of one of their moſt important places. Montmoreney, whoſe liberty had been the object of the ſacrifices made by Henry, returned to court to reſume his power, and form new factions. The joy which the preſence of this favourite gave the monarch, was redoubled by the nuptials of Iſabella of France; and the hand of that princeſs given to Philip ſeemed to ſecure a laſting harmony between the two powers. A dreadful accident, however, ſuddenly deprived the monarch of life, in the midſt of feaſts and entertainments, changed the ſolemnity of the nuptial ceremonies into mourning, filled France with alarms, and gave birth to intrigues and factions, that ſhortly after ſhook the whole ſtate with convulſions.

Philip was now in a condition to attempt any thing. The death of Henry had rid him of a king who committed errors, but was capable of repairing them by his courage and fortitude. The authority his uncle had over the empire, left him nothing to fear from that great body. Philibert, re-eſtabliſhed by his protection, was entirely

entirely devoted to his ſervice, and ready to aſſiſt him with his courage and all the forces of his dominions; the princes of Italy had no longer any hopes of aſſiſtance from France, and the pope, quite happy in having obtained pardon, was afraid to ſhew the leaſt oppoſition to his deſigns.

Such was the ſituation of affairs, when the ſucceſſor of Charles V, formed a new plan for ſubjecting Europe. As religion was neceſſary to his deſigns, he was reſolved to affect an unbounded zeal for that worſhip, in order to perſuade the catholics of all countries to look upon him as their chief protector and avenger. He was ſenſible that the popes dreaded the increaſe of his power, but, as their dominions were ſurrounded by his, he could eaſily keep them in awe, and oblige them to promote his deſigns, by pouring their benedictions on him with a liberal hand, and by heaping cenſures and maledictions on the heads of his enemies.

Among the various nations that acknowleged the authority of Philip, ſome enjoyed privileges incommodious to deſpotiſm; ſuch were the Catalonians, Sicilians, Neapolitans, and particularly the Flandricans; he reſolved to place cruel and oppreſſive governors over them, in order to harraſs them, to be deaf to any complaints they might make, and even to provoke them to rebellion, but to have ſufficient troops at hand to cruſh ſedition, and then deprive them of their privileges by way of puniſhment.

Two powers were capable of obſtructing his ambitious views; France had inexhauſtible reſources, and might be formidable, if ſhe could ſuppreſs the different factions that divided her. England, by a late revolution, had thrown out a weak queen, the venal inſtrument of his deſigns, and placed a princeſs of ſuperior genius, that was his ſecret enemy, on the throne. It was of the utmoſt importance, therefore, to prevent thoſe two nations from acting againſt him, and awaking Europe to a ſenſe of her danger, while he ſhould lull her into ſecurity, in order to enſlave her.

To effect this, he is to foment ſuch diſturbances in thoſe kingdoms, as may give ſufficient employment to the ſubjects and their ſovereigns, to ſpread the ſeeds of diſſention between the different factions, and artfully kindle the flames of religious diſcord; he muſt openly appear the friend of the catholics, aſſiſt them with all his power, and place himſelf at their head, while he is ſecretly to ſtir up the proteſtants, and furniſh them with the means of counterbalancing the catholics. His gold ſhall purchaſe the heads of the ſtate, and direct all their motions; he will remove from the councils ſuch men of capacity as he cannot corrupt, or get rid of them by more ſpeedy and effectual methods. He ſhall keep confuſion alive until the people, weary of their miſery, voluntarily throw themſelves into his arms; or, exhauſted by convulſive ſtruggles, become an eaſy conqueſt to his armies. When France and England are once ſubjected, Italy muſt

fall

fall of courſe; and Germany, happy in preſerving a ſhadow of independence, will be, in fact, the ſlave of Spain. Thus Europe ſhall be at the feet of this prince, and he ſhall have ſubjected her without ſtirring from his cloſet, or interrupting his pleaſures, which he propoſes to cover with the veil of ſuperſtition.

PHILIP fixed his reſidence at Madrid, where, without any real miniſters, he had an eye to every thing himſelf, governed his immenſe dominions, and diſturbed the univerſe. By his intrigues, the ſee of Paul IV was conferred on cardinal Medicis, who was attached to the houſe of Auſtria, and became the miniſter of his deſigns. The new pontiff loaded him with favours, and declared him the protector of the church; the monarch juſtified this title by extraordinary condeſcenſion. He ſubmitted to bulls and papal edicts that affected the majeſty of the throne, and paid a blind deference to the clergy. He raiſed immenſe and magnificent monaſteries, rigorouſly perſecuted the enemies of Rome, and carried his ſpecious zeal ſo far as to ſuffer the memory of his father to be diſhonoured, and permit the venerable archbiſhop of Toledo, who aſſiſted the emperor in his laſt moments, to be dragged to the priſon of the inquiſition.

HE preſided at theſe bloody executions, which bigotry and enthuſiaſm dignified with the name of Acts of Faith. He gave orders for eſtabliſhing that court in all the provinces under his authority, and publiſhed decrees to animate the zeal of the tyrants who preſided over it. The oppreſ-

ſive ſeverity of this tribunal excited ſedition on all ſides.

The Moors who remained in Spain, on the faith of treaties, were enraged to ſee their privileges violated, their liberty continually menaced, and the blood of their deareſt friends flowing beneath the hands of public executioners. Deſpair ſupplied the place of ſtrength, they conſidered nothing but the exceſs of their miſery, and endeavoured to break their chains, the weight of which was become inſupportable. The execution of one of their countrymen, whom they had crowned, did not terrify them; they ſupplied his place with another, and implored the aſſiſtance of ſtrangers, who profeſſed the religion of their anceſtors. A general rebellion rent the ſouthern parts of the kingdom, which now became once more the theatre of ancient animoſity. All Spain was alarmed, Philip alone ſecretly exulted at the revolt he had produced. The wiſdom of his orders, the valour of his troops, and the abilities of the generals he appointed, triumphed over the deſperate reſolution of the Moors, and theſe unfortunate people were obliged to ſubmit to the mercy of the king: they loſt their rights and poſſeſſions, and were tranſplanted to the provinces that lay moſt remote from their former ſettlements.

The people of Arragon, at the ſame time, demanded a reſtitution of their violated privileges, Naples threatened to ſhake off the yoke, and Milan, ſo long remarkable for her fidelity, was endeavouring likewiſe to break her fetters. The

eſtabliſh-

eſtabliſhment of the inquiſition terrified thoſe people, and prompted them to take up arms. But the ſame politic meaſures appeaſed thoſe diſturbances likewiſe, and the efforts exerted by ſo many nations, for the recovery of their liberty, ſerved only to rivet their chains the faſter.

THE tumults and confuſion in Flanders were ſtill more violent. Philip was particularly deſirous of enſlaving this country. The fertility of the ſoil, prodigious numbers of inhabitants, magnificent cities, induſtry, arts, and the extenſive commerce of the Weſt, which was a long time entirely confined to thoſe parts, were ſo many advantages that rendered this nation one of the moſt flouriſhing upon earth. The people were extremely jealous of their privileges, which they had preſerved under their counts and the dukes of Burgundy; they compelled Charles V to reſpect them, and that prince, after deſpairing to ſubject them by terror, took the more generous reſolution to conciliate their affection. Philip, who never had a heart to reliſh ſuch an expedient, was paſſionately deſirous of bending the ſtubborn necks of this people to the moſt oppreſſive and humiliating yoke; their privileges were obnoxious to his pride, and their immenſe riches inflamed his cupidity. When he quitted that country, with a reſolution never to return, he ſeemed inclined to continue the mildneſs of his father's reign; he appointed Margaret, the daughter of Charles V, and widow of Octavius, duke of Parma, governeſs. The wit, charms, and clemency of this princeſs, were well calculated to gain the

hearts of a generous people; but, at the ſame time, the unfeeling cardinal Granville, who made no diſtinction between policy and perfidy, or zeal and perſecution, was placed at the head of the council. This eccleſiaſtic was the depoſitory of the ſecrets of the cabinet, and while he appeared to perform but a ſecondary part, was actually employed in the firſt. Granville, in the poſſeſſion of the ſupreme authority, after the departure of the monarch, treated the nobles with contempt, iſſued extravagant edicts that were prejudicial to induſtry and commerce, multiplied taxes, trampled on the laws, and puniſhed the moſt humble and timid repreſentations as crimes. The Flandricans thus oppreſſed under the yoke of a ſtranger, contented themſelves with lamenting their diſtreſs in private, out of regard to the governeſs, whoſe virtues they reſpected; but the ſight of the tribunal of the inquiſition, an object entirely new to them, which the miniſter erected in the principal cities, and whoſe barbarous ceremonies of religion, in the name of a God of mercy, raiſed a general indignation; the people forgot their weakneſs and duty; proteſtants, impelled by rage and fury, pulled down churches, ſubverted altars, and obliged the clergy to fly. Margaret trembled at thoſe increaſing tumults, and endeavoured to appeaſe them by a prudent compliance with the deſires of the people; the cardinal overturned all her meaſures, and publiſhed a decree of council, equally ridiculous and cruel, againſt thoſe ſeditious proceedings, which condemned all the citizens indiſcriminately, the heretics, for having deſtroyed the temples,

temples, and the catholics, becauſe they did not prevent them.

The nobles, foreſeeing the conſequences of the giddy acts of the miniſter, generouſly endeavoured to diſſuade him from ſuch inconſiderate conduct; being diſmiſſed with haughtineſs, they were in hopes of meeting with more juſtice from an application to the throne. Finding themſelves diſappointed in thoſe expectations likewiſe, they then determined to ſave their country, by a reſolute oppoſition to the council, that ſhould re-eſtabliſh the vigour of the laws.

At the head of thoſe nobles, was William, prince of Orange, deſcended from the illuſtrious family of Naſſau, that had produced many great men; and, three centuries before, had ſwayed the imperial ſceptre. William had long felt a ſecret indignation in his breaſt, at ſeeing himſelf confounded in the croud of ſubjects, an object of the tyranny of a miniſter, and, conſequently, expoſed to his contempt. This prince, with every neceſſary quality for effecting a revolution, had ambition, capacity and courage to undertake any thing, and ſaw, with ſecret pleaſure, that the imprudent haughtineſs of the Spaniſh miniſters was opening a road to give him independence. In order to conceal his ambitious deſigns, he aſſumed an air of ſubmiſſion and reſpect, and talked of nothing but carrying the complaints of his countrymen to Madrid, but he ſecretly concerted a more extenſive plan.

With this view, he conciliated the friendſhip of the great, and ingratiated himſelf in a particular

cular manner with the counts Egmont and Horn. Theſe two noblemen were deſcended from very ancient families, were both excellent citizens and faithful ſubjects; Egmont was diſtinguiſhed by victories he had gained for the Houſe of Auſtria; Horn was reſpected for his virtues by all parties. The cries of the nation carried to the throne by ſuch venerable advocates ſeemed to affect Philip, Granville was recalled, and the people were in hopes of ſeeing all their grievances redreſſed by a new miniſter.

Nature, for the misfortune of the human ſpecies, ſometimes produces men in whom ſhe unites all the powers of the mind with every vice of the heart. Such was the duke of Alba whom Philip appointed to ſucceed Granville. As ſoon as he arrived in Flanders, by an affected ſhew of lenity and moderation that ſilenced all diffidence and apprehenſions, he appeaſed and united the Flandricans, diſarmed them, and decoyed the heads of the nobility, particularly the two Counts to the city of Bruſſels. The governor, thus maſter of their fate, threw off the maſk that till then concealed his deſpotic and ſanguinary ſentiments, confined the moſt diſtinguiſhed perſons in a dungeon, and appointed a ſpecial commiſſion for their trial. Judges devoted to his orders condemned eighteen noblemen to death, and a few days after pronounced the like ſentence againſt Egmont and Horn. Theſe executions, accompanied with the moſt dreadful ſolemnity, were a prelude to many others. Executioners were diſpached from one city to another, and in the

ſpace

ſpace of one month thouſands periſhed under their hands. Terror, that at firſt chilled the courage of the people, at length gave place to deſpair which ſoon relieved it. Numerous armies appeared on every ſide, all animated by the deſire of avenging the blood of their relations, friends, and fellow-citizens ſhed on the ſcaffold, and all made deſperate by the certainty of having no hopes of pardon. Alba, no leſs great as a commander than he was barbarous as a miniſter, flew at the head of a ſmall body of Spaniards, to the different provinces, fought and triumped at every ſtep, diſperſed the confederates, beat down the walls of the cities, and deluged the ſtreets with blood. Then, adding inſult to barbarity, raiſed an immenſe ſtatue, with a deſcription of his victories, the pretended crimes of the Flandricans, and their defeats and puniſhment.

One head, however, eſcaped the governor's ſnares: William prince of Orange, having more penetration than his unfortunate friends, did not give way to the flattering invitations of the Spaniard. He retired to Germany, where he learned, with the reſt of Europe, the miſeries of his country: proſcribed as he was, and his fortune confiſcated; without friends or ſupport, he ventured to declare himſelf openly the avenger of the Flandricans. A general hatred againſt Philip whoſe enormities he laid open, horror and deteſtation againſt the duke of Alba, whoſe tyrannical exceſſes he painted in ſtrong colours, the intereſt of the proteſtant religion, the alliances of the houſe of Naſſau with ſo many ſovereigns, his

prayers,

prayers, his patience and reſolution procured him a ſmall army, and his two brothers who joined him gave increaſe to his hopes.

At the head of a few hundred men he undertook, in the Low Countries, to ſubvert the authority of a monarch who commanded almoſt one half of the world, and to attack the moſt victorious general of the age. Holland and Zeland, provinces that were then obſcure, became the theatre of his firſt eſſay. A country almoſt entirely covered by the ſea, hardly protected from general inundation by a few dikes, interſected by numberleſs canals, barren, marſhy, and conſequently unable to ſupport a conſiderable army, and thinly inhabited, where the miſery of the inhabitants muſt naturally make them more deſperate, appeared to him the moſt favourable place for proſecuting his deſigns.

The inhabitants of the country were zealous calviniſts; William, who had been brought up a lutheran, and turned catholic through complaiſance, now became a calviniſt from neceſſity. He ſcarce raiſed the ſtandard of liberty, when the people flocked round him ready to obey his orders. His firſt attempts were unſucceſsful, and gave way to the ſuperior fortune of the duke of Alba; he returned to Germany, collected another army, made his appearance in Holland again, and was once more obliged to fly. Thus inured to misfortunes, he profited by his miſtakes, and returned a third time to oppoſe the lieutenant of the tyrant of Flanders. Sickneſs having ſuſpended the activity of his ferocious conqueror, a dawn of ſucceſs appeared to chear his hopes.

A BODY

A BODY of pirates and fiſhermen advanced by ſea, and ſurpized the Brill, a city of ſome note at preſent, but then conſiſted only of a number of wretched huts irregularly thrown together. Encouraged by this trifling ſucceſs, thoſe adventurers in poſſeſſion only of a few barren leagues, had the courage to form a ſolemn aſſembly, in which, without declaring any thing againſt Philip, they renounced all obedience to the duke of Alba, and created William their governor.

THIS bold ſtep raiſed admiration, and excited a ſpirit of emulation in others. Harlem, Fluſhing, Leiden, and almoſt all the maritime towns followed the example; the love of civil and religious liberty animated every breaſt, and the Hollanders, till then obſcure and inſignificant, ſeemed to become a nation of heroes. The death and puniſhment of ſuch of the revolted people as fell into the hands of the duke, ſerved only to inflame the ardour and courage of their ſurviving friends; and from the blood and ſufferings of thoſe unfortunate victims, new champions ſprung up to ſupport the cauſe of independence. Courage, in vain, exerted every effort with aſtoniſhing induſtry and perſeverence againſt the confederates; in vain the Spaniards plunged into the waves, and, with their ſwords in their teeth, ſwam in purſuit of thoſe deſperate enemies; every expedient, every reſource which the moſt conſummate knowlege in the art of war could ſuggeſt, were in vain employed with extraordinary patience and reſolution; the love of liberty ſupplied the place of numbers, policy, experience, and riches to the

Hollanders,

Hollanders. After being defeated on Mooker Heath, where they loſt the two brothers of William, driven out from Harlem, beſieged in Leyden, reduced to the laſt extremity, and expoſed to all the horrors of famine, they opened the dykes themſelves, laid one half the city under water, and received ſome ſupplies by veſſels that floated over the ramparts.

The duke of Alba, author of ſo many calamities, was in vain replaced by the venerable Reſqueſens, whoſe age and virtues would have conciliated reſpect and affection at any other time; Requeſens was ſucceeded, to as little purpoſe, by the dutcheſs of Parma, to whom the people never imputed their misfortunes; and after her came John of Auſtria, the natural ſon of Charles V, whoſe memory was dear to Flanders: the conqueror of the Turks at Lepanto, of the Moors in Africa, of the Neapolitans in Italy, the delight of the Greeks, who offered him the crown, and of the Spaniards, who had ſo often triumphed under his command; with all thoſe advantages John of Auſtria united in vain the valour of a hero and the virtuous qualities of a great man. The Hollanders, tho' defeated by that prince in various engagements, and driven out from almoſt all their cities, were ſo far from inclining to yield, that their dangers and misfortunes ſerved only to increaſe their ſpirit and reſolution; and in this very ſituation the ſeven provinces were united at Utrecht by a ſolemn confederacy.

The ſovereignty of Philip was abjured, the Roman catholic religion aboliſhed, the ſtate

erected

erected into a republic, and Wiliam declared their chief under the title of Statholder. The archduke Mathias, whom thoſe republicans had called in for protection in their diſtreſs, was diſmiſſed, and all connection broke off with the other ten provinces. Though leſs numerous and opulent than the Flandricans, they left them to ſolicit the aſſiſtance of the duke of Alencon who oppreſſed them, while they were determined to confide only in their own courage and fortitude.

With one hand they raiſed dykes to prevent the ſea from forcing them nearer to the Spaniards, with the other they beat back the Spaniards, who endeavoured to puſh them towards the ſea. At the ſame time they built ſhips for trade and war; and while they were wreſting thirty leagues of a barren country out of the hands of the moſt powerful monarch in the world, ſome of their fellow-citizens contended with him for the empire of commerce, and the poſſeſſion of both the Indies, two thouſand leagues from Europe.

An aſſaſſin employed by Philip gratified his revenge againſt William, and the ſudden death of that great man, to whom the Hollanders at an earlier period would have raiſed altars, ſeemed to threaten the extinction of the republic he had created, but Maurice, the worthy ſon of that prince, inherited his dignity, his talents and zeal.

The new ſtatholder was not diſmayed at the approach of the duke of Parma, though that hero poſſeſſed all the capacity of the duke of Alba, and, with more knowlege and experience, had many

many virtuous qualities. The abilities, ſucceſs, and victories of that Italian commander filled Europe with admiration, and aſtoniſhed the new republicans without depreſſing their ardour.

THOUGH reduced to the laſt extremity by the amazing efforts of their enemies, they would liſten to no accommodation, and contented themſelves with ſoliciting ſuccours from Elizabeth; but lofty even in their diſtreſſed ſituation, they obliged the Engliſh general to drop the ſtyle of a ſovereign which he attempted to aſſume, being determined to give up every reſource rather than ſubmit to any maſter. The republic revived, her fleets returned richly laden, and furniſhed her with new reſources for repelling her tyrants and ſecuring her liberty on a ſolid foundation.

WHILE Philip was purſuing the war againſt thoſe obſtinate rebels, an unexpected revolution procured him a new kingdom. John III, who during a long reign ſaw Portugal enjoy the moſt ſplendid proſperity, left only a grandſon for his ſucceſſor; he was ſtill an infant, and promiſed to be the model of happy monarchs. A peaceful and wiſe regency augmented thoſe expectations, which were confirmed by the great qualities that appeared in Sebaſtian.

THIS prince, in peace with all Europe, maſter of the moſt extenſive commerce till then carried on, idolized by his people, who fancied the great kings his predeceſſors were revived in him, ſeemed to have nothing that ſhould divert him from enjoying ſuch uncommon felicity. But a vain paſſion for glory having ſuddenly captivated

vated the mind of Sebaſtian, hurried him to the tomb, and with him the glory and proſperity of the nation vaniſhed for ever.

Ambition had lately exhibited at Morocco one of thoſe ſcenes ſo frequent among barbarians. The uncle of the king ſeeing a weak and odious prince on the throne, conciliated the hearts of the people, and obtained the crown of which he was in fact more worthy. The unfortunate monarch having no hopes of aſſiſtance from ſubjects that had ſuffered by his oppreſſion, applied to the chriſtian princes, and endeavoured to intereſt them in his cauſe by the moſt ſpecious promiſes. Philip was too prudent to engage in a war from which he could derive but little advantage, and therefore rejected the ſolicitations and offers of the African. Sebaſtian eagerly embraced them, and reſolved to employ all his forces in reſtoring the tyrant. Deaf to all advice, and blind to every other conſequence, he could ſee nothing in the proſecution of this deſign but the honour of being the protector of kings, the glory of having an emperor for his vaſſal, and of planting the ſtandards of chriſtianity in the capital of one of the moſt powerful enemies of that worſhip. He led the army in perſon againſt Africa, and having landed with ſuch ſucceſs as ſeemed to preſage ſtill greater advantages, he exulted in the general conſternation that made every thing give way to his arms.

The crafty uſurper was at firſt ſurpriſed, and ſeemed to fly, but, profiting by the errors of the protector of his rival, when he was looked upon

as a fugitive by the enemy, he ſuddenly appeared in the plains of Alcaſſar, followed by a body of well-diſciplined troops. In thoſe plains, become famous by the bloody battle fought on this occaſion, the inhabitants of two different parts of the world conteſted the prize of valour: here the vanquiſhed chriſtians ſuffered a memorable defeat, half the Portugueze nobility fell beneath the Mooriſh ſcymitar, and three kings were ſlain.

The cardinal Henry immediately aſcended the throne of Portugal; this aged prelate was too weak to repair the diſorders of the ſtate, and determine the diſputes that aroſe from the proſpect of the crown. Three princes put in their claims at the ſame time: Anthony, the natural ſon of John III, urged his right from a promiſe of marriage the monarch had made to his mother. Catherine, ducheſs of Braganza, reproached Anthony with the illegitimacy of his birth, and claimed the ſceptre, as grand-daughter of Emanuel. Philip, the ſon of a younger ſiſter of the mother of Catherine, inſiſted that being in the ſame degree of affinity with the ducheſs, his ſex ſhould give him the preference.

At the death of Henry, who reigned only two years, thoſe diſputes broke out with violence, and the nation, dreading the yoke of the Spaniards, favoured the cauſe of Anthony, and he was crowned by a powerful party. But Philip, ſupporting his claim by force of arms, obliged Catherine to ſell her pretenſions, and ſent an army to dethrone the baſtard. The duke of Alba,

who

who had loſt the favour of his maſter by his violent proceedings, was placed at the head of this expedition. Victory, ever attached to the ſtandards of that general, was particularly favourable to him on this occaſion; the Portugueze were defeated in every engagement, Anthony was obliged to fly from Portugal, and ſeek refuge in France; Liſbon was taken, plundered and deluged with blood.

EXECUTIONERS ſucceeded to the ſoldiery; the whole kingdom was ſubjected to Philip, and his good fortune at the ſame time gave him poſſeſſion of all the rich appendages of the crown. An impoſtor had the boldneſs to declare himſelf the king Sebaſtian, and that he eſcaped from the battle of Alcaſſar: he made his firſt appearance in Italy, acquired friends there, and gave ſome alarm to the court; but he was delivered up by the duke of Tuſcany, and expiated his impoſture with his blood. Philip, now freed from uneaſineſs, was quiet poſſeſſor of all the Portugueze colonies, that is, of all the coaſts of Africa, Brazil, and the richeſt iſlands of the Indies; and thus united the treaſures of the Eaſt and Weſt, which he expended freely in order to recover Holland, deſtroy England, and diſtreſs France.

FRANCE was in the moſt dreadful confuſion. Henry II left a widow and four ſons; Francis II, who aſcended the throne at the age of ſeventeen, Charles duke of Angouleme, Henry duke of Anjou, and Francis duke of Alencon. The young monarch, who was weak both in body and mind, ſhewed plainly that he was incapable

of managing the reins of government without assistance. Mary Stuart his consort, who was queen of Scotland by birth, had beauty, wit and talents, and was tenderly beloved by her husband; but that princess, with a gay and lively disposition, a taste for pleasure and the fine arts, and the most amiable qualities of any woman of the age, was far from possessing the art of governing. She was desirous of authority only to confer it on the two Guises, her maternal uncles: those princes added new lustre to their birth by their splended talents; the duke was the hero of France, and lately saved it from destruction; the cardinal was the oracle of the clergy, and the admiration of the council of Trent; they were both ambitious, artful, and declared enemies to the princes of the royal family. Anthony, king of Navarre, by his marriage with Jane D'Albert, and Lewis of Condé his brother, were the heads of those princes. Anthony had nothing to support him but his rank and birth; Lewis, with those advantages, united personal accomplishments, abilities and courage. Ann of Montmorency a brave soldier, but a weak general and wrong-headed politician, vain of the authority annexed to the dignity of constable, was for forming a third party in the state; his demands were great, but he was no way formidable.

Catherine of Medicis was a secret enemy to all those factions, and endeavoured to establish her power on their ruin. This woman was of a singular turn of mind; she was a compound of great and mean qualities, of weakness and strength,

ſtrength, of many talents and every vice, and with the moſt inſatiable ambition and revenge, was capable of committing the worſt crimes for the gratification of thoſe two paſſions.

FRANCE was as much divided by religion as politics. The catholics were moſt numerous, had the power in their hands, which their enemies felt, and the Guiſes were their oracles. The people of the reformed religion, weary of their ſufferings, and driven to the moſt cruel extremities, were reſolved to ſeize the firſt opportunity of attacking their perſecutors; they had Condé, Coligny and their own deſpair to ſupport them.

THE tender affection of Francis II for Mary determined that prince in favour of the Guiſes. The duke was made lieutenant-general of the kingdom, and the cardinal placed at the head of the council. The two brothers removed every perſon that gave them umbrage. Catherine enjoyed only vain reſpect, Anthony had nothing but his empty titles, Condé was kept at a diſtance, the conſtable baniſhed, and the miniſtry ſettled on a new footing. The cardinal propoſed to eſtabliſh the inquiſition, and, in the mean time, diſplayed all the horrors of that tribunal; ſex, age or condition were of no conſideration with their inhuman perſecutors. Ann du Bourg, a magiſtrate reſpectable for his integrity and knowlege, was faſtened to a gibbet, in the very midſt of the capital, on the bare ſuſpicion of calviniſm,

THOSE of the reformed religion, ſeeing their enemies maſters of the royal authority, becauſe they governed the court, were in hopes of changing their fortunes, if they could remove the monarch out of their hands; a conſpiracy was therefore formed to carry him off.

A MAN of obſcure condition was the oſtenſible head of the plot, and Condé ſecretly the ſoul of the whole deſign. A thouſand gentlemen were to meet at Amboiſe, ſeize upon the perſon of the king, carry him to a place in the intereſt of the proteſtants, where they had hopes of opening his eyes to the conduct of his miniſters.

THE plot was diſcovered by the indiſcretion of ſome of the party, and moſt of the conſpirators were put to death; ſome fell by the ſword, and others ſuffered under the hands of the executioner. The court affected ignorance of the ſhare Condé had in the deſign, flattered and lulled him into fearleſs ſecurity, then threw him into priſon, and judges, who were bribed for the purpoſe, condemned him to loſe his head. At the very moment the ſentence was going to be executed, the ſudden death of the king ſaved the prince, and gave a new turn to affairs.

CHARLES IX, at the age of ten, took poſſeſſion of the ſceptre of his brother, and his mother Catherine had all the authority. The firſt object this queen had in view, was to gratify her revenge againſt the Guiſes, and mortify them in turn, as they had humbled her. Mary Stuart was ſent to Scotland. The place of lieutenant-general, the firſt dignity in the kingdom, was given

given to the king of Navarre, from whom they had no apprehenſions; favours were heaped upon Condé, in order to gain his attachment, and as the catholic party formed the baſis of the authority of the Guiſes, Catharine was determined to favour the oppoſite faction. She appointed a conference to be held at Poiſſy, where the heads of both religions ſhould diſpute before the court; and, as ſhe conſidered Beza ſuperior to the cardinal, they were ſet againſt each other, in the midſt of an aſſembly compoſed of the moſt illuſtrious and exalted characters of France. The eloquence of Beza ſeconded the views of his protectreſs, the celebrated miniſter of Geneva obtained a ſort of advantage that augmented the adherents of his religion.

CATHERINE thence took occaſion immediately to publiſh an edict, allowing liberty of conſcience; ſhe afterwards granted ſo many privileges and indulgences to thoſe of the reformed doctrine, that ſhe at length placed both religions nearly upon an equal footing.

THE Guiſes, in the mean while, ſaw into the deſigns of Catherine, and exerted all their zeal and induſtry to counteract them. A number of emiſſaries were continually exclaiming, that religion muſt be loſt under ſuch a feeble government. They gained over the old conſtable, who was already diſſatisfied with the court, on account of the little reſpect ſhewn to his talents; the mareſchal de St. André, who had been the head of a party, through the favour he enjoyed in former reigns, intereſted himſelf likewiſe in

their cauſe, and the weak Anthony, ever ready to be influenced by the illuſions of promiſes, or the fears of diſappointment, was likewiſe ſeduced to their party.

A TRIUMVIRATE was formed of thoſe three noblemen, engaging themſelves to protect the catholic religion againſt its enemies, and even to defend it from every attempt of the throne.

THE minds of the people were in a general fermentation, and all the French took part on one ſide or other. The two Guiſes kindled the flames of hatred and diſcord in every breaſt, and ſome found they had nothing farther to ſeek but an opportunity of forcing thoſe of the reformed religion to take up arms. The maſſacre of ſixty proteſtants of the little town of Vaſſi, by the domeſtics of the duke, fully diſplayed party reſentment, that till then lay concealed, and brought about the event ſo much wiſhed for by the faction.

CONDÉ, the protector of the reformation, demanded vengeance of the court. Catherine, fearful of the hatred of the catholics, refuſed to do juſtice; the prince, enraged, took up arms, and invited his party to follow his example. Coligny, the glorious defender of St. Quintin, who, beſides the rank of admiral, poſſeſſed many eminent qualities and virtues, immediately joined the prince; Dandelot, and the cardinal de Chatillon, brother to the admiral, notwithſtanding his purple habit, united in the ſame cauſe; they were followed by the proteſtants of Beauce; the gallant La Noue appeared at the head of the people of Britanny,

Brittany, and Rohan advanced with the calviniſts of the ſouthern provinces.

CATHERINE hated the catholic party, but was afraid to avow her ſentiments; Anthony, incapable of thinking for himſelf, was led againſt his brother, and periſhed at the ſiege of Rouen; the conſtable commanded the catholic army, but Guiſe his lieutenant, was the ſoul of every motion.

THE two factions met in the plains of Dreux, where they firſt came to blows on account of religion; the battle was accompanied with all the horrors of enthuſiaſtic fury. Condé was taken by the catholics, the conſtable by the reformers; Guiſe, however, gained the victory, purſued the enemies, drove them before them, croſſed Beauce, and laid ſiege to Orleans, the ſtrongeſt bulwark of calviniſm. The city was ready to ſurrender, an event that muſt have entirely ruined Catharine, Condé and the proteſtants, and ſubjected the whole kingdom to himſelf and his brother, when he was treacherouſly aſſaſſinated, and, with his laſt breath, forgave his murderer: he was a hero, but not a great man, for his criminal ambition involved his country in confuſion and diſorder.

CATHERINE haſtened the majority of her ſon, from a perſuaſion that ſhe ſhould reign with more ſecurity in the name of a king entirely devoted to her. The privileges of the proteſtants were immediately reſtored, and the diſſenſions of the ſtate appeaſed, ſhe took advantage of the general harmony to diſpoſſeſs the Engliſh of the important

ant city of Havre, which they had ſurprized in the times of confuſion. She encouraged the wiſe l'Hopital, and, by the advice of that immortal magiſtrate, made many glorious regulations. Population and commerce, at the ſame time, were encouraged and protected. She began the Louvre, and, with architecture, revived the fine arts which ſhe invited from Italy.

ALL parties united to bleſs her name, and the people flattered themſelves that the glory and happineſs of France were about to revive, when the ſuſpicious fears of ambition ſuddenly produced new ſtorms. Though Guiſe was no more, Catherine ſtill thought her authority was not perfectly ſecure. Condé, at the head of a powerful party, that idolized him, gave her uneaſineſs, ſhe was therefore reſolved to humble him. To leſſen the power of Guiſe, ſhe had weakened the catholics, ſhe now formed the deſign of cruſhing the proteſtants in order to diminiſh the authority of Condé. She began with curtailing the privileges that had been granted to them; they ſoon after ſuffered the moſt atrocious inſults, and when they ſolicited juſtice and redreſs, no regard was paid to their complaints; violent meaſures were at length adopted, which ended in an open perſecution againſt them.

CONDÉ plainly perceived the deſign of the queen, and gave the alarm: his faithful admiral joined him, and both united their endeavours to take the king out of the hands of their perſecutors. Ten thouſand calviniſts ſuddenly inveſted Meaux, a city incapable of defence, where the

the court then happened to reſide. Catherine had but a few guards round her, who were too much terrified to afford her any protection; ſhe looked upon herſelf as undone, and the young king ſaw no hopes of eſcaping out of the hands of Condé, from whoſe ambition he had every thing to fear.

In the midſt of this general conſternation and terror, a few Swiſs offered to conduct the court ſafe to Paris; they formed a hollow ſquare, in the midſt of which they placed the king, his mother and all their numerous train of attendants. In this order they marched over a plain of ten leagues, opened themſelves a paſſage with their pikes, made head on every ſide, oppoſed, kept off, repulſed a cavalry above ten times their number, that continually harraſſed them, and conveyed Charles to the gates of Paris, where they were received like ſo many heroes.

The troops were immediately aſſembled, and the old conſtable led them towards St. Denis, where a bloody action, without determining the victory, deprived that general of life. He, died a philoſopher, after having lived as a man of ambition. Catherine, ſeeing that force would be inſufficient to reduce ſuch active and courageous enemies, employed art to ſecond her deſigns; a peace, favourable for Condé, was made at Lonjumeau, and his apprehenſions being lulled by that treaty, ſhe ſent her guards to ſeize his perſon. The admiral, informed of their deſign by his ſpies, gave notice to the prince, and they both renewed the war.

France was now an entire ſcene of ſlaughter, from one extremity to the other. Henry, duke of Anjou, and brother to the king, gained a battle at Jarnac, where the vanquiſhed Condé was aſſaſſinated with cool deliberation. Calviniſm ſeemed entirely cruſhed by this double loſs, but was revived by the courage of Jane D'Albert, widow of the cowardly Anthony; ſhe flew to the camp of the admiral, with her ſon Henry, the new king of Navarre, and the young Condé. The ſight of thoſe princes, the intrepid ſpirit of Jane, and the confidence of Coligny revived the hopes of their party, and encouraged them to purſue the war.

The duke of Anjou endeavoured in vain to profit by his ſucceſs, and ſhut up the entrance of Poitou: he was defeated at Rochebelle, and could not prevent the proteſtants from advancing as far as Poitiers, where Henry de Guiſe, ſon to the celebrated Francis, who inherited all his talents and vices, was governor. Coligny obliged to raiſe the ſiege, was immediately attacked at Mont Cour by Anjou ſtill covered with the laurels he had acquired at Jarnac; rivers of blood again flowed in this conflict, and the catholic party was once more triumphant.

The calviniſts had now no other reſource but in ſome German troops that were at the extremity of France. But with the ſhattered remains of a vanquiſhed army it was almoſt impoſſible to croſs over an extenſive kingdom, through ſuch numerous enemies, and in the ſight of the victor. The intrepid Coligny however began his march, and having

having forced his way through the battalions of the enemy, routed Coſſe, who was ſuperior in number, and attempted to diſpute the paſſage of the Loire. Grown more formidable by having effected a junction with the foreign troops, he obliged Catherine, notwithſtanding the victories of her ſon, to ſubmit to a peace, the terms of which were dictated by the proteſtants.

The pride of Catherine was ſo much offended by repeated oppoſition, that the indifference ſhe had for all ſects was now changed into a violent hatred againſt calviniſm, and ſhe was firmly determined to exterminate that party. She reſolved however to ſtrike her blows more effectually, and exulted at the proſpect of having it in her power to accompliſh her aim by the blackeſt perfidy. She, in appearance, gradually laid aſide her reſentment againſt that ſect, careſſed the heads of the religion, and ſeemed to take a pleaſure in heaping favours on them. She played this difficult part for two whole years, taught her ſon to perform the ſame character, and infuſed into his mind the moſt profound diſſimulation. To give her enemies the moſt convincing proofs of a perfect reconciliation, ſhe admitted Coligny into the ſupreme council, applauded and conſulted him, and propoſed a match between the young king of Navarre and the ſiſter of Charles.

Henry haſtened to Paris, Condé followed him: the admiral, la Force, Rohan, Cruſſol, and all the heads of the Calviniſts were deſirous of being preſent at a ceremony that promiſed to be the pledge of everlaſting peace. The nuptials were

were celebrated with pomp and joy; Charles, Catherine, and d'Anjou ſeemed charmed with the ſacred ties that united both parties: but in the night of the feaſt of St. Bartholomew the horrid ſignal was given; the magiſtrates of the different wards rouzed the pariſians.—Crouds of murderers, with torches, crucifixes, and poniards in their hands, called up the catholics, and invited them to the murder of the proteſtants. They forced open the palace of the admiral, and that great man, who inſpired even his murderers with reſpect, fell under the blows of a ruffian, without a complaint or reproach. Cruſſol was ſtabbed, la Force periſhed with his ſons, the king of Navarre and Condé ſaw the ſword ſuſpended over their heads, and eſcaped death only by renouncing their religion.

The aſſaſſins ſpread themſelves through the different ſtreets, being joined by a multitude of fanatics, murdered ſome in their beds, threw others out of the windows, and fired upon thoſe who attempted to fly. Hatred, revenge, jealouſy and all the paſſions made a moſt horrible ſlaughter under the banner of religious zeal; robbery, violation, and plunder involved every thing in confuſion; every part of the immenſe city flowed with blood, and ſix thouſand calviniſts were butchered in one night. Similar orders having been given in the provinces, the like exceſſes were committed there, and immenſe numbers of unfortunate people periſhed by the ſword of religion. A few governors, and the generous biſhop of Lizieux with difficulty preſerved ſome diſtricts from

from the like dreadful calamities. Thoſe acts of barbarity were dignified with the name of juſtice; the clergy ſanctified the horrid night; Philip ordered thankſgivings at Madrid on the occaſion; Rome made bonefires and rejoicings, and beſtowed benedictions on thoſe enormities.

Despair took poſſeſſion of the hearts of the proteſtants. Montauban gave the ſignal for vengeance, Sancerre followed the example, and preferred all the horrors of famine to the misfortune of falling under the yoke of the catholics; Rochelle became the centre of the reformed party, and made ſo glorious a defence, that the duke of Anjou was happy to find a plauſible pretence for relinquiſhing the ſiege. Poland, to whom he was known only by his victories, had beſtowed her ſceptre on this prince. He felt it painful to quit his country where his heart was attached by love, and the court was obliged to make terms with thoſe rebels, of whom they had lately ſlaughtered ſuch numbers. A treaty favourable to them ſuſpended hoſtilities; and ſhortly after Charles IX, at the age of twenty-ſix, terminated a reign that had been a ſeries of diſcord, fury and criminal horrors. This prince was perhaps more worthy of compaſſion than cenſure, It has been obſerved that he had a fund of virtue, and he has left us proofs of his wit. But as he was unfortunately the inſtrument of the ambition of his cruel mother, he ſhared in the reproach of her enormous crimes.

Catherine, who was declared regent in the abſence of Henry III, haſtened the return of her ſon.

ſon. He quitted the Poloneſe with ſome reluctance, having already conciliated the hearts of that people. Henry on his arrival found affairs in the moſt dangerous ſituation. The proteſtants were quiet, but attentively on their guard, having conſtantly before their eyes the poniards of St. Bartholomew. Among the catholics a number of worthy citizens, ſincerely attached to the throne, were deſirous of peace, and ſolicited a free toleration, as the only means of obtaining it. Another party, conſiſting of fanatics and factious perſons, wiſhed for confuſion and troubles, and urged the extinction of calviniſm. The latter acknowleged the king, only out of form; Philip was their ſupport, and the family of Guiſe the idol of their affection.

In this critical ſituation it was not only neceſſary to adhere ſtrictly to the treaties made with the proteſtants, but to have likewiſe an unbounded attachment for the catholic citizens, and a continual attention to the proceedings of the ſuperſtitious. It was of the utmoſt conſequence particulary to avoid engaging in any war on account of religion, as it muſt be advantageous to the Guiſes, the moſt formidable enemies of the throne.

Such were the meaſures recommended by the court of Vienna and the ſenate of Venice, when the new monarch paſſed through thoſe cities on his return from Poland. Henry unhappily was incapable of following their prudent advice. Wit, eloquence and even courage prepoſſeſſed people in favour of this prince at firſt ſight; but, upon

near

a nearer examination, he ſhewed the moſt unaccountable inconſiſtency of character. As to religion, it was impoſſible to judge of his ſentiments, nor did he, in fact, ſeem to have any fixed ideas; ſometimes his daring temerity roſe to atheiſm, on other occaſions his credulity deſcended to the moſt puerile ſuperſtition; one day he was plunged in debauchery ſhocking to decency and nature; the next perhaps his bigotry became a reproach to reaſon and common ſenſe; ſometimes he appeared as a great king and ſeemed to ſoar above his dignity; at other moments he was a weak tyrant, and even fell below the condition of humanity: he was alternately reſolute to obſtinacy, or effeminately weak; always in extremes, never obſerving a due medium, but perpetually hurried to exceſs by the moſt violent paſſions. Indifferent with regard to the doctrine oppoſed by the calviniſts, he hated that people without having any particular motives. He was ſuſpected of having contrived the murder of Condé at Jarnac, the priſoners of Mount-Contour were butchered by his orders, and his advice occaſioned the horrors of St. Bartholomew.

It is eaſy to conceive that, with ſuch a diſpoſition, Henry was very incapable of that prudence and moderation which the times required. The moment he arrived in his dominions he attacked the proteſtants, and miſcarried in attempting to reduce a place of no ſtrength or conſequence; alarmed afterwards at their progreſs, fear induced him to propoſe a peace, which he ſhould have obſerved from motives of policy: it

was not long, however, before he violated the conditions, and Monbrun, the chief of the calviniſts in Dauphiny, having been ſurprized by a ſtratagem, was hanged by his orders. He ſoon after quarelled with his brother the duke of Alencon, and forced him to throw himſelf into the reformed party. The latter had already taken up arms, and was headed by the king of Navarre, who, having eſcaped from court, had lately abjured the oaths that violence had extorted. Inſtead of placing his real friends at the head of his troops, he gave the command to Henry de Guiſe, and furniſhed his moſt dangerous enemy with an opportunity of acquiring great glory that ſoon increaſed the number of his adherents. Being jealous afterwards of the prince, and terrified moreover by the ſtrangers whom the proteſtants had called in to their aſſiſtance, he ſuddenly terminated hoſtilities by a peace every way advantageous to them, and highly diſgraceful to the throne.

He now became an object of contempt to all ſects, and of hatred to the catholics; but, inſtead of effacing the memory of his errors, and conciliating reſpect, by a prudent adminiſtration, he flattered himſelf that he ſhould be able to reeſtabliſh his credit, with regard to religion, by acts of ſuperſtition which he made a jeſt of in private.

He inſtituted ſodalities, aſſiſted at abſurd proceſſions, appeared under fantaſtic dreſſes, and impoſed ridiculous penances on himſelf, which he performed in the view of the people and court. The court contemned him for his hypocriſy, and

the

the people deteſted him as an impious wretch, when it was known, that after thoſe ceremonies were over, Henry actually plunged into ſcenes of debauchery, where he ſhewed as little reſpect for religion as common decency. The public was informed of this by Guiſe, and that dangerous ſubject, ſeeing the throne attacked by general hatred and contempt, imagined the time was now come for putting his ambitious deſigns in execution. With the genius, the abilities, and courage of a father, who had been the idol and ſaviour of the nation, Henry of Guiſe poſſeſſed a more engaging perſon, more ſeductive graces, and a more unbridled ambition. He ſaw the king childleſs and without hopes of offſpring; the duke of Alencon, intoxicated with the chimerical expectation of marrying Elizabeth, was likely to die with that notion; the throne, in that caſe, would belong to the family of Bourbon, the heads of which were the king of Navarre, Condé his couſin, and the cardinal, who was uncle to both.

The two firſt were calviniſts; religion would furniſh a pretext for excluding them from the throne; the ſame cauſe, however, muſt place the crown on the head of the third; but that prince already advanced in years, and noted likewiſe for his weakneſs of underſtanding, would have no more than the empty title of king, while Guiſe ſhould hold the ſceptre, and, in the mean time, prepare every engine ſo as to ſecure the ſucceſſion to himſelf at the death of the old man. The main point of this plan conſiſted in making him-

ſelf the head of a party whoſe intereſts were ſeparate from that of the throne, and who might be powerful enough to oblige Henry to diſinherit his relations. This advantage was to be obtained by forming a confederacy of all the zealous catholics, who ſhould have their council, their treaſury, their armies and commanders independent of the king. The neceſſity of reforming the ſtate, and the pretence of avenging, ſupporting, and preſerving religion were to be the bands of this confederacy.

The pope would, he ſuppoſed, approve of a league that ſhould ſecure the power of his ſee. The king of Spain would aſſiſt a faction that he muſt look upon as a means of diſmembering France. Guiſe was reſolved to make uſe of their aſſiſtance, nor ſcruple to violate any promiſes dictated by policy, whenever ſuch infidelity became uſeful to his political intereſts.

The prince of Lorraine and his brother the cardinal, laboured with the moſt indefatigable zeal in the execution of this project. Anonymous letters, private reports, public advertiſements, ſeditious ſermons, and the tribunals of confeſſion all echoed with, all proclaimed the progreſs of impiety, and the dangerous ſituation of the church.

When the minds of the people appeared ſufficiently heated, artful emiſſaries propoſed the plan of the concerted aſſociation; copies of it were circulated, at firſt in the capital, and ſoon after diſperſed through all the provinces. Picardy was the firſt to ſubſcribe; Paris followed

the

the example, and in a little time the ſame was imitated by one half of the kingdom. Thus, in a ſhort ſpace, Guiſe ſaw one half of the French united by the ties of enthuſiaſm, ready to hazard every thing, as ſoon as the image of religion ſhould appear to demand their aſſiſtance.

The monarch ſtarted for a moment from the intoxication of pleaſure, to contemplate the frightful precipice to which he had been carried by his imprudence. The king of Navarre entirely opened his eyes by a very pathetic epiſtle; he explained what he had to dread from a body ſo numerous and powerful; he demonſtrated that it was their mutual intereſt to be united together, in order to cruſh this monſter at its birth. Henry, in vain, felt the truth of thoſe repreſentations; his weakneſs, his flatterers, and hatred againſt the calviniſts blinded him; he conceived a reſolution by means of which he imagined that he ſhould defeat the deſigns of the rebels. This was to ſubſcribe to the confederacy himſelf, and make himſelf maſter of that hydra, by declaring himſelf the chief. But his policy deceived him, and ſerved only to deprive him of the aſſiſtance of the calviniſts, whoſe deſtruction he had ſworn; and to make him the ſlave of the confederates, who gave the command of all their forces to Guiſe.

Two armies appeared in the field, both deſigned for the extinction of calviniſm, and both abſolutely of oppoſite intereſts: Guiſe, general of the cruſade, commanded the confederates; Joyeuſe, the favourite of the monarch, was at the

head of the royaliſts. Henry, who ſhould have given orders to his general to remain ſatisfied with being a ſpectator, ſuffered him to attack the king of Navarre at Coutras, where the misfortune of Joyeuſe, who periſhed in the conflict, deprived the throne of the army that was its only reſource. The fortune of the intelligent Guiſe was quite different; that leader, having triumphed over a body of Germans who had flown to the aſſiſtance of the reformed party, and ſtruck terror into the very heart of France, was looked upon as the deliverer and hero of his country.

The monarch was informed that this ambitious man was returning to Paris, where he was in a manner adored; he in vain attempted to prohibit his appearnce there; Guiſe entered the capital in triumph, amidſt the acclamations of the citizens, who had hung out their richeſt tapeſtry, and ſtrewed the ſtreets through which he paſſed with flowers. Hearing that the court had ſolicited troops, he gave orders for barricading the ſtreets, inflamed the rage of the populace, obliged the guards of the king to implore his clemency, diſarmed them, and led them back in that condition to the Louvre, contenting himſelf with the dangerous honour of having made his maſter tremble.

Henry ſeeing no ſafety for himſelf in a city devoted to his mortal enemy, fled thence inflamed with rage and the deſires of vengeance. Guiſe, well knowing all he had to fear from the prince, judged that there was no occaſion for farther delay, and correcting his plan by the event, reſolved

ſolved not to wait for the death of the king. He obtained a bull from the pope excommunicating the king of Navarre and Condé, and declaring them incapable of ſucceeding to the crown. He intimidated the monarch by threats from Rome, and had the art to extort from him an edict that conferred the title of firſt prince of the blood on the cardinal of Bourbon.

In thoſe intrigues he was aſſiſted by Catherine, whom he perſuaded, that he was willing to exclude the firſt branch of the royal family only for the ſake of giving the crown to the young duke of Lorraine, grandſon of that queen and Henry II. No ſooner was he certain of the ſucceſs of his meaſures, than he threw aſide the veil by which he had deceived Catherine, Henry, and all the honeſt citizens, and had it determined by ſome divines, that it was lawful to dethrone a king who was incapable of governing. At the ſame time he ſpread the moſt injurious reports againſt the ſovereign, whilſt the cardinal of Guiſe publicly boaſted that he would ſhut him up in a cloiſter.

Henry looked down with horror at the dreadful abyſs that was gaping under his feet. Hated by the proteſtants, whoſe deareſt blood he had ſhed, deſerted by the catholics, whoſe hearts his enemy had gained, ſurrounded by a perfidious court, betrayed by ſubjects on whom he had accumulated favours, without troops or money, he ſaw no hope but in the dangerous expedient of aſſembling the ſtates; but he vainly flattered himſelf that the majeſty of the throne diſplayed in

the moſt auguſt aſſembly of the nation would recall the people to their duty. The aſcendant of his enemy reigned equally at Blois as at Paris, and Guiſe no ſooner appeared there than he gained every voice. A general murmur ſeemed to portend fatal reſolutions, and Henry was in more imminent danger than ever. He then formed the only reſolution left him, and ſhaking off his natural weakneſs, with a boldneſs and ferocity no leſs violent, he had the duke of Guiſe aſſaſſinated in his palace, and the cardinal murdered in priſon, and by this double example terrified the ſtates. Had he marched immediately to the capital, in the conſternation which the news of this violence had ſpread, he might perhaps have recovered his authority. His timidity delayed him, and Paris reſumed all her fury.

The people, made deſperate by the loſs of their hero, inveighed againſt the monarch; Sorbonne declared him fallen from the throne; the populace beat down the ſtatues of his favourites; Mayenne, brother to the Guiſes, ſwore to avenge their blood. The clergy declaimed againſt him in the churches, and the pope let looſe the thunders of excommunication. Forty rioters called the *Seize*, took poſſeſſion of the Baſtile, where they confined the firſt preſident, and the reſt of the magiſtrates that remained faithful. Buſſi, who had been at firſt a fencing-maſter, and afterwards became an attorney, made himſelf maſter of the city, and governed it like a tyrant; while cardinal Pellevé, the paſtors Aubry and Boucher, and biſhop Roſe,

Roſe, made their ſacred characters inſtrumental in kindling the flames of diſcord.

The unfortunate Henry in one half of his ſubjects ſaw nothing but parricides thirſting for his blood, and had no place of refuge but among thoſe very calviniſts whom he had perſecuted. To them he raiſed in a ſuppliant manner the very hand that had butchered them; he was fortunate enough to find in their leader a generous enemy, who ſuppreſſed his long and deep reſentment, and devoted all his power to his ſervice.

The two kings, having united at Tours, advanced towards Paris, and after having routed the forces that had been ſent againſt them by the confederacy, they directed their march to St. Cloud, where they opened a ſiege, the ſucceſs of which was not doubtful. Rage and fury now took poſſeſſion of the minds of all the fanatics, the maxims of paricides were more frequently heard than ever; in the churches, confeſſion-boxes, and private converſation, the crown of martyrdom was held out as an infallible reward to the generous chriſtian who ſhould deliver France from her tyrant. Young Clement, a ſuperſtitious monk of a weak and diſtempered mind, ſeduced by the artifice of his prior, inflamed with the deſire of meriting heaven, imagined he had found an effectual method to obtain it; and, uniting perfidy with murder, aſſaſſinated Henry at the very moment that monarch was ſtooping to embrac him. Thus periſhed the laſt branch of the fameily of Valois, who had produced ſuch powerful ſovereigns; the misfortunes of this prince were extreme, but they

will

will no longer appear ſuprifing, when we compare them with his imprudent conduct.

The king of Navarre, deſtined by the laws, and nominated by the dying monarch, was proclaimed in the camp by the name of Henry IV. This prince was deſcended from Saint Lewis by Robert of Clermont, who, as conſort to the heireſs of Bourbon, had tranſmitted that name to his poſterity. This branch of the royal family had reckoned no kings among them for three centuries, and been always expoſed to the jealouſy of the houſe of Valois. The father of Henry, who was ſlain fighting for his enemies, had left him at the age of nine years under the guardianſhip of his mother Jane D'Albert, a female of heroic ſentiments, who, notwithſtanding her ſex, had the ſoul of a great man.

Jane, from an apprehenſion that the example of an effeminate and cruel court might prejudice the morals of her ſon, carried him to Bearn, and gave him an education entirely new. As ſhe was attached to the calviniſts, ſhe placed him under the care of the virtuous Florent, who inſpired his pupil with an attachment to the ſame party. At the ſame time ſhe formed him to a ſevere, laborious, and military life.

After the death of Condé, Henry, at the age of ſixteen, was conducted by his mother to the camp of the reformers, and became the head of a great party, but who had been already vanquiſhed at Jarnac, and afterwards at Mount-Contour. A favourable peace ſeemed to have reſtored tranquility to Henry and his friends; and his

marriage

marriage with Margaret, the daughter and ſiſter of his kings, appeared as a ſacred pledge of a reconciliation with the throne; but, in the midſt of the preparations for the nuptials, his mother was taken off by poiſon; and a few days after the ceremony, his principal adherents were butchered with the moſt ſhameful perfidy: he was himſelf ſurrounded by poniards, and languiſhed four years in captivity. Having eſcaped from his enemies, and being forced to take up arms for the preſervation of his life, he aſſembled the remains of his party, and furniſhed them with troops. His affable and lively diſpoſition, his patience, and the example he ſhewed in being always the firſt in the works, and the foremoſt in battle and danger, his being leſs delicate in his dreſs and meals, and his being more careleſs about his place of reſt than his followers, all ſupplied the place of treaſures and pay to his troops.

He was forty hours on horſeback at Cahors, and was ſeen fighting in the ſtreets of that city for three ſucceſſive days, without intermiſſion. He was found ſleeping on the ſnow, and diſcovered marking out a camp with one hand, while he was eating a piece of brown bread out of the other; on one occaſion he marched againſt the enemies, and, after defeating them, returned to another place to mix among the labourers, and, with a ſpade in his hand, aſſiſted in opening the trenches. When he had, by patience and the ſword, extorted a peace that ſeemed effectually to ſecure the tranquility of his party, the confederacy menaced France with general confuſion, and the calviniſts with

with total deſtruction. The Guiſes, Spain and Rome, whoſe intereſts were divided, united to cruſh him. He was attacked at Coutras, by an army much ſuperior to his, and obtained a victory, for which he was indebted only to his own prudence and valour; but he had ſcarce ſucceeded, when he ran to his ſoldiers to prevent the effuſion of the blood of his enemies; he treated the priſoners with the utmoſt tenderneſs and humanity, and ſhed tears over the body of their fallen commander. He was ſoon after informed of the deplorable ſituation of Henry; he might have left him a prey to misfortune; by acting in that manner, he would have avenged the death of his mother, of his uncle and friends, whoſe blood had been ſhed by that prince; but he would ſee nothing in Valois but his brother-in-law, and an unfortunate man; he received him with reſpect, and without reproach, and haſtened to re-eſtabliſh him. After the murder of that prince, he wept over him, honoured his remains, and ſucceeded him. Let us, for a moment, take a view of the ſituation of France, when he aſcended the throne.

The camp of Henry was compoſed of catholics and proteſtants. The latter unanimouſly acknowleged him, but the fear of ſeeing him change his religion, already began to inſpire them with ſuſpicions and miſtruſt that might prove fatal. Among the catholics, thoſe who admitted his title and pretenſions, inſiſted on his ſubmitting to their form of worſhip; the reſt, who ſought nothing but independence, abandoned his ſtandard;

dard; the duke of Epernon was at the head of the latter, and his deſign was to take advantage of the troubles, in order to eſtabliſh a ſovereignty for himſelf in the ſouthern provinces.

PARIS was compoſed of three different factions. The firſt was that of the virtuous catholics, who refuſed to acknowlege Henry only on account of his being a calviniſt, and were ready to ſubmit as ſoon as they could ſee their religion ſecure. The ſecond was formed of a ſet of wretches, who aſſumed the cloak of religion for no other purpoſe, but to commit every act of violence, or to preſerve an unjuſt authority; this faction was increaſed by the fanatics, who were ſincerely perſuaded that the faith they profeſſed demanded rebellion, blood and horrors. The third party conſiſted of Spaniards and their creatures; the intention of thoſe was to procure the crown for Philip II, brother-in-law to the three laſt monarchs, or for his daughter Iſabella their niece.

MAYENNE, the head of all thoſe rebels, entertained ſecret hopes of making ſo many different factions ſubſervient to his deſigns, and inſtrumental to his elevation. He carefuly concealed his views, and, faithful to the plan of his brother, propoſed to place the crown on the head of a weak man, that he might have time to make preparations for ſucceeding him. He had the cardinal of Bourbon proclaimed, but, at the ſame time, made himſelf the real maſter of France, under the title of lieutenant-general of the crown.

THE

THE principal provinces of the kingdom were in the poſſeſſion of governors who had made themſelves independent. Mercoeur, prince of Lorraine, ſeized upon Brittany; Epernon reigned over part of Provence; Leſdiguires erected a kind of ſovereignty in Dauphiny; the Guiſes were all-powerful in Champagne and Burgundy; Balagny, the baſtard ſon of the biſhop of Mount-Luc, was the tyrant of Cambray; and Villars governed Normandy with deſpotic ſway.

THE reſt of the provinces acknowleged no authority; violence decided in every thing, and fanataciſm took up arms in all quarters. The whole kingdom exhibited the ſame ſpectacle that appeared when the weakneſs of the deſcendants of Charlemagne ſuffered their monarchy to be divided into a vaſt number of ſovereignties. The neighbouring princes endeavoured only to continue the troubles of the ſtate, in order to diſmember it. Spain furniſhed the confederacy with troops and money, and Rome beſtowed her favours with profuſion. The duke of Savoy ſeized upon the marquiſate of Saluces, and menaced, at the ſame time, Dauphiny and Provence. The duke of Tuſcany himſelf ventured to take advantage of the calamities of the ſtate, and took poſſeſſion of ſome iſlands in the Mediterranean.

ENGLAND and Venice were the only powers that favoured Henry, but the latter lay too remote, was too weak, and too cloſely ſurrounded by the Auſtrian poſſeſſions to declare herſelf openly. England had employment enough for her troops in repelling the invaſions of Philip; beſides,

beſides, having declared herſelf the protectreſs of Holland, ſhe was ſo far obliged to devote her attention to that quarter, that ſhe could afford but little aſſiſtance to the reſt of her allies.

In thoſe difficult circumſtances, Henry, by the deſertion of part of the troops that followed his predeceſſor, was obliged to raiſe the ſiege of Paris. He retired to Normandy, a province in ſubjection to one of his moſt formidable enemies. Being purſued by Mayenne, at the head of the army of the confederacy, who came up with him near the little city of Arc, he conſulted nothing but his courage, and ventured to accept the battle againſt eighteen thouſand. A complete victory made ſome little change in his ſituation; the uſe he made of this advantage was to advance towards Paris, and make himſelf maſter of the ſuburbs of that city; but as the few troops he had were inſufficient to force the place, he contented himſelf with having alarmed the inhabitants, marched towards Beauce, and opened the campaign with inveſting Dreux.

Mayenne, having recruited his army, advanced haſtily, to oblige him to raiſe the ſiege; he was accompanied by Egmont, the general of the Spaniards, whom Philip had ſent to the aſſiſtance of the confederates; this Egmont was ſon to that great man who had ſealed the liberty of the Low Countries with his blood. Henry marched againſt them, and met them on the banks of the Eure, in the plains of Ivry. By the moſt prudent meaſures he remedied, in ſome ſort, the diſadvantage of the great inferiority of his army;

and,

and, with that air of confidence, ſo capable of inſpiring courage: *My friends*, ſaid he to his ſoldiers, *you are Frenchmen, I am your king; if you ſhould loſe your colours, rally wherever you ſee the white feather in my hat, you will always find it in the road to glory.* After this ſhort harangue, he charged the enemy at the head of his courtiers and guards, but, in the midſt of the ſlaughter, he had his eye to all things, moved about to every ſide, ſupported one body, rallied another, repaired a misfortune, profited by a miſtake. After a conflict of ſix hours, he ſelected a few reſolute men, threw himſelf into the midſt of a foreſt of lances, pierced the enemy's centre, threw them into confuſion, and decided the victory. Egmont was ſlain, Mayenne fled towards Paris; Henry followed him and inveſted the place. Having, by the wiſdom of his meaſures, made himſelf maſter of the courſe of the Seine, and that of Marne, he cut off the proviſions of the beſieged, and reduced the capital to deſpair.

In the mean while, Buffi, followed by guards, ſpies and executioners, dragged to priſon, or the ſcaffold, the honeſt citizen who ventured to complain. Aubry, Roſe, and Pellevé went from houſe to houſe to animate the ſuperſtitious, and death, by famine, was declared an infallible title to eternal felicity. The nuncio liberally beſtowed his indulgences, or thundered out anathemas; the Spaniſh ambaſſador promiſed money and troops; the monks took up the ſword and muſket, and, after a military proceſſion, divided themſelves on the ramparts.

FAMINE continued to make dreadful havoc in the city; fanaticiſm ſought relief in the church-yards, and made bread of human bones. A woman, diſordered in her mind by exceſs of miſery, ſtabbed her own ſon, in order to ſatisfy the cravings of hunger with his fleſh; but, recovering her ſenſes, on the appearance of ſome famiſhed wretches, who, attracted by the odour, had entered the houſe, in hopes of partaking of the prey, ſhe plunged the knife into her own breaſt.

HENRY, informed of thoſe horrors, generouſly ſhed tears, and, liſtening only to the dictates of his own compaſſionate feelings, ſent proviſions himſelf to thoſe unhappy people, who thirſted for his blood. An occaſion offered of taking the city by ſtorm; his humanity, ſhocked at the calamities that would neceſſarily follow upon ſuch an event, made him reject that expedient, and he preferred the loſs of an opportunity of acquiring ſo glorious a throne.

IN the mean time the duke of Parma had quitted Flanders, and was marching with the utmoſt diligence to ſuccour Paris, by order of Philip. Henry was obliged to advance againſt him, he came up with him, could make no impreſſion on his troops, followed him without any advantage, ſaw him throw men and proviſions into the city, take poſſeſſion of and ſecure the contigous places, paſs the ſeveral rivers that ſurround the Iſle of France, croſs over a ſecond time that province, Picardy, and Flanders, and there reſume his conqueſts.

HENRY admired the foreigner, profited by his own miſtakes, and having been forced to abandon his firſt enterprize, advanced to beſiege Rouen. Parma returned, traverſed the whole northern part of France a ſecond time, obliged the king to raiſe that ſiege, croſſed the Seine in view of the enemy by an admirable manœuvre, and returned quietly to purſue his victories.

PARIS was ſtill more divided than ever. The *Seize* taking advantage of the abſence of Mayenne, who was gone to meet the Spaniſh general, exerciſed the moſt boundleſs tyranny, ſtruck terror into the breaſts of the virtuous citizens that remained; and, not finding the magiſtrates docile enough to countenance their exceſſes, they hanged Briſſon the preſident of the parliament, and put the counſellors Larcher and Tardiff to death in the ſame manner, the one in the court-yard of the parliament, and the other in that of the chatelet.

MAYENNE, who was recalled by the voice of the people, at length cruſhed the faction of thoſe monſters, by condemning ſome to death, a puniſhment too mild for their crimes, and forcing others to fly from France. Having made himſelf maſter by this exertion of authority, he aſſembled the general ſtates, and propoſed the election of a king to replace the cardinal of Bourbon, lately deceaſed. The legate of the pope preſided in this aſſembly with all the pomp of a ſovereign; the Spaniſh ambaſſador and Mayenne were ſeated on each ſide of him, factious eccleſiaſtics, monks and ſome obſcure perſons, who were

were become the heads of the confederacy, held the place of the reſt of the nation, and pretended to repreſent the majeſty of the ſtate.

Pelleve, in a ridiculous ſpeech, inveighed againſt Henry, declared the throne vacant, and the legate was for having it filled. The Spaniard, who at firſt propoſed his maſter, ſeeing that a remains of patriotiſm produced ſome murmurs unfavourable to his deſigns, talked of a marriage between the infanta and the duke of Guiſe. Shouts of applauſe were raiſed by the confederates in favour of a young man, whoſe name recalled to their memory his father and grandfather, who had been ſo dear to them. Mayenne ſhuddered with ſecret rage to ſee the ſuffrages in favour of any other but himſelf, and was reſolved to obſtruct every election, that he might reign by continual anarchy. The ſtates ſeparated without having produced any other effect but animoſity fatal to all the factions. The ridiculous light in which ſome ingenious ſatyriſts repreſented this ſtrange aſſembly, effectually expoſed the leaders to the contempt of a people, who never loſe their taſte for raillery, even in their greateſt misfortunes.

The citizens who ſincerely fought for their religion, opened their eyes to the intereſts of which they had been the dupes, and loudly demanded a conference with the catholics who followed Henry. That monarch was returned to the gates of Paris with freſh forces, and threatened the city with a ſecond ſiege. Spain and the confederacy in vain renewed their efforts to break off a nego-

ciation from which they had every thing to fear. Prudent mediators brought the agents of both parties to an interview, at which every thing announced the moſt happy concluſion.

The poſſeſſion of a throne, the hopes of tranquility, the pleaſure of ſparing blood, the delicious proſpect of making a great people happy, all giving weight to the arguments of the catholic divines, Henry abjured the religion in which he was born, and which he loved. The courage of this prince, his talents, his humanity and love for his ſubjects, which he ſo generouſly evinced in the aſſiſtance he gave them againſt himſelf, the horrors of the oppoſite party, the ambition of Spain, the crimes of the *Seize*, the fanatic ſpirit of the confederacy, the pleaſing hopes of ſeeing a calm ſucceed after thirty years of ſtorm and confuſion, were ſo many motives to determine Paris; and Briſſac, in concert with the inhabitants, opened the gates to the new proſelyte; the people received him on their knees with the moſt flattering acclamations, while the Spaniards fled with Mayenne and his confederates in the midſt of inſults. Sorbonne was in haſte to annul her paricidial decrees; the monks abjured their ſanguinary maxims; the faithful parliament of Tours returned to Paris, at their head was the glorious Harlay, who remained unſhaken in the midſt of confuſion, and was dear to the king, and admired by the nation.

The provinces ſeemed to vie with each other in imitating the capital, and deſerting the faction of the confederacy. This faction expired at the

battle of French-Fountain in Burgundy, where the monarch was attacked by 10,000 Spaniards, where, after being ſurprized and ſurrounded by them, he aſtoniſhed them by prodigies of valour, diſperſed them with only 1500 men, and gained a victory almoſt incredible. Mayenne, ſtruck with the greatneſs of ſoul of his adverſary, at length fell at his feet; he was loaded with favours and became the friend of Henry; Epernon was forced to give up Provence; Mercœur was obliged to abandon Brittany; Leſdiguiers, without loſing the recompence due to his ſervices, mixed in the claſs of ſubjects, and reſtored Dauphiny to France; Balagny was compelled to do homage for the city of Cambray, and Normandy imitated the ſubmiſſion of Villars.

Rome was a long time inflexible, until at length, overcome by the abilities of D'oſſat, her hatred was diſarmed, and by an abſolution, in which ſhe was permitted to preſerve the vanity of her pretenſions, ſhe deprived the catholics of every pretext for rebellion. Spain alone implacable, carried on the war in Artois, had conſiderable ſucceſs, took ſeveral towns on the frontiers, and by ſuprizing Amiens ſpread terror to the capital of the kingdom. After writing to his ſiſter, that he was weary of acting the part of king of France, and was deſirous of performing that of king of Navarre, Henry immediately marched to that city which he retook, invaded Flanders in his turn, and forced Philip to terminate their long conteſt by the peace of Vervins, which completed the glory of the hero.

FANATICISM, though humbled, was ſtill inexorable; and having no longer any hopes from war, had recourſe to aſſaſſination. She daily armed the hands of ſome ruffian by flattering his expectations, or ſome weak man by deluding his zeal. The converſion of Henry was ſcarce known when Barriere attacked him, and after having failed in his parricide, the wretch died in full perſuaſion that he ſhould obtain a crown of martyrdom. John Chatel, influenced by ſanguinary maxims, attempted the life of his ſovereign immediately after the ſurrender of Paris; and in the midſt of the dreadful torments which he ſuffered, he expreſſed no other concern, but that of having miſſed his aim. The jeſuit Guignard, having been convicted of inſpiring that villain with his horrid reſolution, was condemned to an infamous death, and met his fate without ſhewing any ſign of repentance. A carthuſian imagined that he had received orders from heaven to aſſaſſinate the king, and the prince eſcaped this blow only becauſe the enthuſiaſt communicated his deſign to the prior who confined him.

HENRY, thus expoſed to the attacks of thoſe wretches, was in hopes of diſarming them by two methods, by making his people happy, and reſtoring the ſtate to her ſuperiority and glory. He found the finances in wretched diſorder, and the treaſury in debt above 100,000,000 livres. By his œconomy, his frugal manner of living, and retrenching all ſuperfluous expences, without laying on any new tax, though he leſſened the old, he was enabled in the courſe of ten

ten years to pay off the debt, and formed a treaſury where he laid up annually ſeveral millions. He ſaw the people oppreſſed by exactions on account of the many counterfeit nobles who eaſily impoſed upon them during the confuſion of the civil wars; he braved the reſentment of thoſe uſurpers, and compelled them to return to their original condition, and contribute to the public expence. He was ſurrounded by courtiers who had followed him in his misfortunes, and continually teazed him with requeſts, which, if he complied, would diſtreſs his people; he had the courage to refuſe them, and preferred the eaſe of his ſubjects to the vain reputation of a grateful prince, which he muſt have acquired at the expence of the unfortunate. The rage of duelling occaſioned the loſs of ſome of the beſt blood of the ſtate, without advantage or glory; he repreſſed this ſpirit by ſevere edicts, which he inforced by rigorous examples.

At the ſame time he was attentive to every particular that might contribute to the happineſs of the nation. He revived agriculture that had been neglected by his predeceſſors of the Houſe of Valois, and by honours as well as rewards encouraged that firſt principle of public proſperity. He reſtored the old manufactures, and eſtabliſhed a new one at Tours, which proved a ſource of opulence to his ſubjects. He opened canals and facilitated a communication between the provinces; thus at Briare he united the Loire and the Seine, and formed the plan, executed long after, of uniting the two ſeas. He made Paris

more convenient by magnificent bridges, and adorned that capital with public buildings.

The artillery was re-eſtabliſhed, a marine began to be formed, navigation flouriſhed again, and the colony of Canada, the firſt ſettled by France, opened ſources of external commerce. The fine arts were protected, learning encouraged, and virtue rewarded; an hoſpital was erected for thoſe unfortunate ſoldiers who had been the victims of their fidelity and valour, became the model of the eſtabliſhment that was afterwards formed by his grandſon, and reflects the greateſt honour on his memory.

Sully ſhared with his maſter in the glory of his labours; Sully, the real friend of his king and country, was a great captain, an able politician, and immortal ſtateſman; he had the courage to carry to the feet of the throne the moſt ſevere truths, and was fortunate enough to find a king who thanked him for having the reſolution to diſpleaſe him ſometimes. They both ſeemed to contend in mutual endeavours to make the French forget the ſtorms and calamities they had ſo long ſuffered. Every perſon has heard the ſimple and ſublime words with which Henry expreſſed his deſire of procuring to his ſubjects not only the neceſſaries but the pleaſing ſuperfluities of life. Who is ignorant of the glorious reply he made to the duke of Savoy, when that prince enquired the amount of his revenues? "I know not, ſaid he, I do not reckon with my ſubjects; as they love me, they imagine that all they

they have is mine, and I am of opinion that whatever I have is theirs."

In the height of the civil wars, he was informed that one of his detachments had ſubjected a revolted province, and was treating the people with ſeverity: "run, ſaid he, run to my ſoldiers; tell them to deſiſt from violence; in ill-treating my people they attack me: though they are rebels they are ſtill my children. Curious to know every thing that could promote the happineſs of his ſubjects, he eagerly ſought advice that might contribute to the accompliſhment of this glorious deſign. Unhappy the man who can read without emotion, the ſpeech he made in the midſt of the aſſembly at Rouen! "I have called you together for your advice. I am far from thinking myſelf infallible. Tell me my faults. I ſhall never be aſhamed to learn from my family."

Devoted as he was to thoſe generous cares, he attended with no leſs ardour to the glory of the ſtate; and this father who had ſuch tenderneſs for his people, became, on ſuch occaſions, the moſt reſolute of monarchs. He had already compelled Spain to reſtore the uſurpations ſhe had made; with ſimilar firmneſs he demanded the reſtitution of the Marquiſite of Saluces, of which the duke of Savoy had taken poſſeſſion. Emanuel made an uſeleſs journey to Paris; flattered, intreated, intrigued, and exerted every art of policy. Henry, ſtill reſolute, baffled his ſchemes, and obliged him to give him up Breſſe, Bugey, and the neighbouring diſtricts in exchange. The duke of Tuſcany was forced to reſtore the iſlands he had

ſeized

ſeiezd upon; Bouillon was obliged to ſurrender the cities of his ſovereignty, and to acknowlege that he recovered them only through his clemency.

The Houſe of Auſtria was conſtrained to keep fair with the proteſtants of the empire whom he protected. He became the umpire between Spain and the united provinces, and dictated the terms of pacification betwixt both powers. Venice and the pope choſe him for a mediator in a quarrel that was likely to diſturb the peace of all Italy. The princes who conteſted the rich ſucceſſion of Juliers and Cleves, agreed to refer their diſpute to him, and the whole empire looked upon him as the guardian and avenger of her liberty. Thus France, who, at the acceſſion of Henry, was the moſt degraded and wretched ſtate in Europe, became, during ſo ſhort a reign, one of the moſt flouriſhing powers in the world at home, and one of moſt reſpectable abroad.

So much benevolence and wiſdom could not, however, diſarm envy. Spain, by her ſecret artifice, raiſed even the friends of the hero againſt him. Bouillon, d'Auvergne, and Aumale, who had been diſtinguiſhed by his favours, or were objects of his clemency, plotted and took up arms againſt him. Various conſpiracies were concerted, diſcovered and pardoned. Even Biron, whoſe life he had ſaved, on whom he had conferred favours with pleaſure and profuſion, without ſeeming to remember a former perfidy, of which he had been guilty; this very Biron betrayed him a ſecond time, plotted againſt his life,

life, and was endeavouring to diſmember France, in concert with the court of Madrid. Being taken and convicted, he refuſed to acknowlege his crime, and made himſelf unworthy of a ſecond pardon, which Henry conjured him, with tenderneſs, to accept on that condition. His obſtinacy extorted the king's conſent to his execution, but, ſatisfied with a ſingle victim, he pardoned all the accomplices. Provoked, however, at the perpetual ſnares laid by Spain to deſtroy him, he made preparations to avenge himſelf by humbling that power.

A CONFEDERACY, formed with no leſs wiſdom than ſecrecy, procured him the intereſt of Denmark, England, Savoy, the proteſtants of Germany, Venice, and even the pope. A hundred thouſand men were ready to march under his orders, forty millions amaſſed for this war, ſo many declared and ſecret allies, and a hero at the head of all thoſe forces gave the beſt founded expectations of ſeeing reduced to very narrow limits, the power of that monarchy which threatened to oppreſs all Europe.

HENRY was ready to begin the operations of this great expedition, the eyes of all Europe were fixed upon him, when he was ſuddenly aſſaſſinated by an obſcure wretch, though he was ſurrounded by his courtiers and friends, by a people who, in a manner, adored him, and in the midſt of feaſts and entertainments made on account of the queen's coronation.

THUS fell a prince, above all praiſe, whoſe name cannot be heared without veneration, and whoſe

whoſe image raiſes ſentiments of love and eſteem. He was a great king, a brave ſoldier, the moſt amiable private character of the age in which he lived, and the only conqueror, perhaps, who merited the admiration the vulgar that indiſcriminately beſtows upon all, becauſe he always conſidered war as a ſcourge, and that he never made it but juſtly, againſt his inclination, and in his own defence.

THE ingratitude and avarice with which ſome have dared to charge a ſoul ſo exalted, were virtues in him; they flowed from that ſacred principle which ſhould be ever preſent to the eyes of ſovereigns; "that what they refuſe to their courtiers is ſo much beſtowed on their people." He may be reproached for too great a paſſion for the ſex; but this would have been more excuſable, had it not ſometimes led that great prince into errors injurious to his affairs. He was a man, in ſhort; but all things conſidered, he may be looked upon as the moſt reſpectable ſovereign that has appeared ſince the days of Trajan and Marcus Aurelius. He wanted, perhaps, only a more cultivated mind to be equal to thoſe incomparable men.

ENGLAND AND SCOTLAND.

WHILE the talents of a hero reſtored to France her happineſs and glory, a woman, formed, like him, in the ſchool of adverſity, maintained the tranquility of England, and rendered her nation one of the firſt in the world. Elizabeth was the offspring of a marriage which one half of the chriſtians

chriſtians conſidered as unlawful. Her mother was charged with the moſt odious accuſations, and appeared on the throne only to periſh ſoon after under the hands of an executioner. An act, ratified by the general aſſembly of the nation, had fixed a ſtigma on the daughter of that wretched queen, and annulled her pretenſions; and, though a will ſeemed to have reſtored them, it had not effaced the ſtains that were caſt on her birth.

Elizabeth was in hopes of enjoying ſome quiet during the reign of her brother, but ſhe experienced new dangers under an inſolent protector, who attempted to ſacrifice her. After eſcaping from this peril, ſhe fell into another ſtill greater.

Enthusiasm and jealouſy having armed the hands of the ſuperſtitious Mary, Elizabeth was attacked by odious informations, and ſhut up in the Tower, where ſhe was frequently menaced with the axe. It was in the midſt of thoſe misfortunes that ſhe cultivated her mind with ſciences and learning aſtoniſhing for her age and ſex. Her figure, her youth, her ſufferings, and above all, her talents gained her the hearts of a people who could ſee none of thoſe bright accompliſhments in their queen. But this affection ſerved only to exaſperate her perſecutrix, already determined to ſacrifice her, but had ſuſpended the blow, at the intreaty of Philip, whom policy intereſted for the life of the princeſs.

The death of Mary ſuddenly terminated all thoſe ſufferings, and gave Elizabeth a crown, which

which the voice of the people more freely conferred than the laws. The new ſovereign ſaw her ſubjects divided into two factions, mutually endeavouring to deſtroy each other. The catholics ruled in the council, poſſeſſed the chief places and dignities, and ſeemed, at firſt ſight, to be the more powerful party.

THOSE of the reformed religion, oppreſſed by the tyranny of the preceding reign, and expelled from all employments and honours, appeared to have no real ſtrength; they were, however, the moſt numerous, and the people, in general, were inclined to favour that ſect.

ELIZABETH was indifferent as to the doctrines of either worſhip, and conſidered them only relative to her intereſt. Her mother had been, in ſome ſort, the victim of the proteſtant party, her friends had been the ſupport or martyrs of it. Her perſecutors were the heroes of catholicity; that communion had always conſidered her birth as illegitimate, and, conſequently, her title to the crown inſufficient. Though intereſt determined her againſt Rome, her natural diſpoſition was equally averſe to that court; ſhe was proud, and could not ſee, without a kind of indignation, crowned heads ſtooping at the feet of the pontiff: ſhe was vindictive, and recollected, with the moſt lively reſentment, the inſulting bulls that had been publiſhed againſt her father: ſhe was jealous of her authority, and could not behold, without pain, a multitude of eccleſiaſtics ſcattered through her dominions, ready to obey a foreign power: being naturally inclined to incredulity

credulity, ſhe preferred the religion that offered the feweſt myſteries of faith, and required the leaſt ſacrifice of reaſon. Her political intereſt united with thoſe conſiderations; the great riches of the clergy with which ſhe might enrich her treaſury, were a temptation to a princeſs, who conſidered a wiſe œconomy among the cardinal virtues of a ſovereign.

Celibacy, to which eccleſiaſtics were bound, appeared to her in an unfavourable point of view; ſhe imagined it injurious to population, which ſhe looked upon as the baſis of the proſperity of empires. Cloiſters, ſhe thought, robbed ſociety of citizens, the ſtate of protectors, and induſtry of hands.

She was too politic to make known her ſentiments ſuddenly, but holding the balance ſuſpended between both parties for ſome time, ſhe kept them in a ſtate of uncertainty with regard to the ſide that ſhould preponderate. She ſent a ſolemn embaſſy to the pope, and pretended a deſire of maintaining a permanent friendſhip with him. Paul IV at that time governed the church; he was far from poſſeſſing the prudence neceſſary on ſuch an occaſion. The imperious old man rejected, with the moſt inſolent contempt, the ſubmiſſion of Elizabeth, ſpoke with inſulting terms of her birth, commanded her to quit the throne, and inſiſted that ſhe ſhould give the crown to him to diſpoſe of as he thought proper.

The proud Elizabeth now no longer concealed her ſentiments, but recalling her ambaſſador, openly declared in favour of the enemies of Rome.

In

In a parliament aſſembled for the purpoſe, the members of which ſhe had previouſly gained, ſhe ſubverted the edifice of her ſiſter, aboliſhed the catholic religion, and after the example of her father, aſſumed the title of ſupreme head of the church. Under this title ſhe executed the plan of a particular religion, in which ſhe admitted the new doctrine, and preſerved a part of the ancient ceremonies. Thus, by dexterouſly blending both worſhips, ſhe left men the liberty of reaſon, of which they are ſo jealous, and retained the external ſplendor that makes religion reſpectable in the eyes of the people, and more powerfully attaches them to its maxims.

In the mean time her firm and able hand defeated the plots formed by the adherents of the proſcribed worſhip, and her prudent adminiſtration made her the idol of the followers of that which ſhe protected. As ſhe perceived that the weight of taxes was that kind of oppreſſion which the ſubjects were leaſt apt to forgive, ſhe reſolved to regulate her expences ſo as to avoid the neceſſity of extraordinary ſupplies. Struck with the numberleſs inconveniencies reſulting from the adulteration of the coin, ſhe reformed that abuſe of her predeceſſors, and fixed metals at their juſt value.

Agriculture, till then neglected, became one of the principal objects of her attention. She revived the ſpirit of commerce and that of navigation that were loſt in the times of confuſion and trouble. Bold navigators, encouraged by wiſe regulations, undertook to form colonies that after-

afterwards became the principal ſources of general proſperity; and England, that had no ſhips at the beginning of this reign, roſe to ſuch a height in a few years that ſhe was conſidered as one of the firſt maritime powers. Her cares ſo active and happy at home were equally ſo abroad. She ſaw her dominions ſurrounded by implacable and powerful enemies.

The pope attacked her with the thunders of the church, and encouraged the monks ever devoted to his intereſts. Philip, though he affected an appearance of friendſhip, was her ſecret enemy: the title of defender of the catholic religion, which he took a pride in aſſuming before all Europe, prompted that prince to oppoſe a queen who had aboliſhed it, and her refuſal to give him her hand was another motive of hatred with the Spaniſh monarch: beſides his extravagant ambition, that tended to enſlave all nations, naturally armed him againſt a princeſs who could not bear ſubjection.

France was no leſs to be dreaded: Henry II had given his confidence to the Guiſes, who, beſides the zeal which thoſe princes expreſſed for the pope, had particular rights to inforce againſt Elizabeth. Their ſiſter actually reigned in Scotland, and the daughter of that queen, who was married to the dauphin, made pretenſions to the throne of England; and thoſe pretenſions were too well founded not to create apprehenſions. Mary Stuart, great grand-daughter of Henry VII, was the firſt princeſs of the royal blood, and ſhould

conſequently inherit the ſceptre of Mary Tudor, if Elizabeth were illegitimate.

The doubts that were circulated relative to the birth of this daughter of Ann Bullen appearing ſufficient to the courts of Paris and Edinburgh, Mary aſſumed the title and arms of queen of England, and ſeemed only to wait for an occaſion of inforcing her rights. Elizabeth, ſurrounded by ſo many enemies, endeavoured to oppoſe them by powerful alliances, and particularly to perplex them in their own dominions. Her determined reſolution never to marry was uſeful in promoting the firſt object. She kept the competitors that ſolicited her hand in a ſtate of ſuſpence, and, by flattering them with vain hopes, engaged them to ſerve her. By this means ſhe retained in her intereſts the king of Denmark, the prince of Sweden, and the eldeſt ſon even of Philip: in like manner, by promiſes thrown out in favour of the dukes of Anjou and Alencon, ſhe procured friends in France among the chiefs of the moſt inimical ſects. To oppoſe, at the ſame time, a formidable party to that which attacked her, ſhe declared herſelf the general protectreſs of all proteſtants, perſuaded them to look upon her as their only ſupport, and procured in foreign countries men of reſolution and vigour, dependent on her orders, and ready to act agreeable to her deſigns.

She ſecretly encouraged the rebellion of Flanders that gave ſo much trouble to Spain: ſhe ſupplied the heads of that infant republic with aſſiſtance of every kind, and in this manner ſupported

ported continual enemies againſt the moſt powerful of her opponents. Her intrigues, promiſes, and gold gained her friends at the court of France, that counterbalanced the influence of the Guiſes; whilſt artful emiſſaries in different quarters of Paris fomented the hatred of the proteſtants againſt thoſe princes. When the death of Henry II ſeemed to have raiſed the favour of the houſe of Lorraine to the higheſt pitch, Elizabeth redoubled her efforts, and ſeconding the reſolution of Condé and Coligny, engaged them in a civil war, the conſequences of which muſt prove ſo very troubleſome to France and her rulers. Perpetually in league with thoſe two chiefs, ſhe cheriſhed the diviſions they occaſioned in the reign of Charles IX, and after their death ſhe continued to aſſiſt the king of Navarre. She publicly ſent him troops, ſupported him againſt the confederacy, and, during the reign of Henry III, became the principal cauſe of the ſucceſs of the proteſtant party. By this ſeries of meaſures, always well-timed, ſhe fettered the efforts of the Guiſes, and continually traverſing their deſigns in France, prevented them from interrupting her political proceedings in Scotland.

SCOTLAND was become a theatre of all the horrors of which the moſt extravagant fanaticiſm is capable. Calviniſm had crept into that kingdom, and adopted all the ſeverity of principles of the founder. The followers of this ſect violently attacked the moſt innocent ceremonies; they looked upon the leaſt amuſement as criminal, and the moſt ſlender toleration of the rites of the

Roman church as an abomination that deſerved puniſhment. Their miniſters always appeared with the moſt auſtere countenance; their diſcourſe was myſtical, ſavage and extravagant; they endeavoured to eſtabliſh their doctrine by the moſt rigorous methods, and their gloomy imaginations had formed ſuch a notion of God, that they thought it laudable to ſhed the blood of their adverſaries. The property of the clergy was pillaged, ſtatues, till that time held in the greateſt reſpect, were trampled upon in the ſtreets before the eyes of the queen; and the altars, torn down with enthuſiaſtic rage, were frequently ſtained with the blood of the prieſts. The regent, zealous for the ancient worſhip, but governed by wiſdom and prudence, in vain endeavoured by mildneſs and reſolution to conciliate the minds of the people; at the head of the French ſent her by her brothers, ſhe in vain flattered herſelf with the hopes of reducing thoſe ferocious ſectaries that her clemency had attempted to diſarm. After defeats that ſeemed to have entirely cruſhed them, ſhe ſaw they appeared again with new vigour, ſpoke with more inſolence, and inſulted her with greater rage and violence. The beſt concerted meaſures were defeated, the valour of the foreigners became uſeleſs, and the rebel party daily grew more terrible and dangerous. Elizabeth, the inviſible ſoul of this body, directed all their motions, and ſupported all their ſtrength. As ſoon as ſhe found them powerful enough to reſiſt the throne, ſhe threw off the maſk, and the Engliſh, who openly appeared in the

armies

armies of the factious inſurgents, obliged the regent to ſubmit to a peace which they dictated. A confederacy, ſoon after formed for the preſervation of the reformed religion, placed themſelves under the protection of England, and thus gave up to a foreign queen the power of the Scotch ſceptre. It was in thoſe circumſtances that Mary Stuart, after loſing her mother and conſort, quitted France to aſſume the reins of government in her native country.

EDUCATED in a court ſubmiſſive, ſplendid and voluptuous, inſpired with a taſte for the fine arts, accuſtomed to receive incenſe from a crowd of admirers, the beauteous Mary, at the age of nineteen, was ſhocked to find herſelf at the head of a poor ferocious people, who were inimical to authority, arts and pleaſure. When ſhe arrived at Edinburgh, ſhe could ſcarce obtain permiſſion to profeſs the religion of her anceſtors within the walls of her palace. The mercileſs miniſters of the new worſhip, inſulted her faith, her taſte and her manners in their barbarous ſermons which they compelled her to hear. The prieſts ſhe protected were loaded with abuſe in her preſence; her relations and friends were deſpiſed; and with the name of queen ſhe was no more than the firſt ſlave of a fanatical and barbarous government. Men, ſprung from the loweſt obſcurity, reigned imperiouſly under the title of paſtors, and continually affronted, in the moſt atrocious manner, a young princeſs, whoſe beauty, charms, wit and many virtues made her the moſt accompliſhed ſovereign in Europe. Mary was born with a

tender heart that invited her to make choice of a conſort, and ſaw that policy applauded her inclination. By ſharing her throne ſhe ſhould procure a protector of her rights, and an avenger of the majeſty of her rank. But this motive ſuggeſted that ſhe ſhould chuſe a powerful huſband, who, uniting his forces with hers, might free her from the double yoke of the calviniſts and England. She had it in her power to ſelect among the greateſt catholic princes, who all ſolicited her hand; and, among the Scotch, many noblemen of diſtinguiſhed merit and fortune were in a condition to procure her effectual aſſiſtance. Influenced by the ſentiments of her heart alone, ſhe rejected all thoſe alliances, and married Henry Stuart, the fineſt perſon and the weakeſt head in the kingdom.

The beginning of this union ſeemed to ſecure to Mary the happineſs with which ſhe had flattered herſelf. The tender harmony that ſubſiſted between the royal pair made them reſpectable to the nation, reſtored ſome degree of ſtrength to the regal authority, and the factious ſpirit kindled by Elizabeth grew leſs violent. The fecundity of Mary augmenting the love of her people, ſhe was on the point of triumphing over her enemies, and even diſputing the ſceptre of England with her rival. But two years were ſcarce elapſed in the enjoyment of this delicious tranquility, when jealouſy ſuddenly diſturbed the hopes of this great proſperity. The king gave ear to calumny, and no longer beheld Mary but in the light of a faithleſs wife; Mary, provoked at his ſuſpicions,

cions, began to deſpiſe a prince to whoſe weakneſs love had before made her blind. Not ſatisfied with depriving him of the authority, ſhe called in, to ſhare in her councils and confidence, her natural brother the earl of Murray, a traitor, that under a fair outſide concealed the worſt of hearts.

As ſhe was incapable of miſtruſt, ſhe gave up the cares of government to her new miniſters, while ſhe employed her time in cultivating the fine arts with an Italian, whoſe talents ſhe admired. The enemies of the queen, in the mean time, inflamed the ſuſpicions of the weak Henry, inſinuated that he had a rival in the obſcure muſician whom ſhe encouraged, inſpired him with the deſires of revenge, and offered themſelves to execute it. The unfortunate Italian was ſtabbed by order of the king, at the queen's table, in her arms where he had flown for protection, and the princeſs was covered with the blood of the unhappy and innocent victim, at the very time ſhe was ready to bring into the world the only fruits of her marriage.

The moſt violent hatred ſucceeded to the diſlike ſhe had already conceived againſt her huſband, and in the firſt emotions of her paſſion ſhe expreſſed her deſire and hopes of puniſhing him. She ſeemed, however, ſome days after, to have forgot her reſentment, and the ſon ſhe brought forth was looked upon as a precious earneſt of a return of the former harmony between the two conſorts. But at the very mo-

ment almoſt of reconciliation, the exploſion of a barrel of powder under the apartment of the king, blew up, in the night, the palace which Mary had juſt quitted, and killed the unfortunate monarch. The noiſe awakened the city, and the melancholy fate of Henry was quickly made known.

The people aſſembled in crowds round the palace, demanded vengeance, accuſed Bothwel, a Scotch nobleman and new favourite of the queen, and charged herſelf with being an accomplice in the crime. Murray, who imagined he now ſaw a road opened for his aſcending the throne, or at leaſt uſurping the ſovereign authority, encouraged the odious ſuſpicions that were circulated againſt his ſiſter; the reformed party openly confirmed them, and the emiſſaries of Elizabeth ſecretly juſtified them.

Edinburgh, Glaſgow and all Scotland were up in arms, and equally menaced the queen and him whom they ſtyled her lover. On this occaſion Bothwel formed and executed the moſt daring project that ever entered the head of a ſubject. Followed by ſome friends devoted to his ſervice, he carried off his ſovereign, ſhut himſelf up with her in a fortified town, and there, whether the princeſs was influenced by inclination or fear, he compelled her to marry him publicly. Every doubt now vaniſhed before the torches of thoſe imprudent nuptials, and Mary was no longer conſidered by her ſubjects but as an adultreſs and murdreſs of her huſband, who,

by

by the blackeſt enormity, had ſought the privilege of marrying the accomplice of her guilt.

The wiſhes of the miniſters of the reformation were now fully gratified in finding ſo favourable an opportunity to ſecure their triumph, by the ruin of the enemy of their worſhip. They inflamed the reſentment of the people by the moſt lively repreſentations of the pretended crimes of the queen. The churches and market-places echoed with the odious appellations that were beſtowed upon her, and with the cries of rebellion which was repreſented as a duty. Murray had thrown off the maſk, and ſeconded the fanatical party with all his power, whilſt the ambaſſador of Elizabeth inflamed the general rage and deteſtation by pretended endeavours to appeaſe them.

In a few days the plains were covered with rebels who carried on their colours the images of the murdered monarch, of Mary the murdreſs, and of her ſon lifting up his infant hands to ſupplicate vengeance. They proceeded in a tumultuous manner, talked of nothing but puniſhing, and breathed only deſtruction to Bothwel and the queen. The two lovers had neither prudence or reſolution to make head againſt their furious adverſaries; Bothwel had no other way of eſcaping death, with which he was threatened, than by flying to a foreign country; Mary fell into the hands of a barbarous brother, and was expoſed to the inſults of an enraged populace, who demanded her execution. Sentenced by her ſubjects, depoſed, ſhut up in a fortreſs in the midſt

midſt of a lake, deprived of the ſight of her friends, her relations, and even her ſon, ſhe ſuffered, for a whole year, all the miſeries of the moſt horrid captivity. Her ſevere ſufferings and bitter mortification affected the compaſſionate feelings even of ſome of her perſecutors; and thoſe uniting with her adherents, a lucky ſtratagem ſet her at liberty, and placed her at the head of an army that revived her hopes. Fortune, that never ſmiled on this princeſs but to expoſe her to new diſappointments, now betrayed her again; and having loſt a battle againſt the active Murray, all her expectations were at an end, and ſhe found it neceſſary to fly for refuge out of her mercileſs country.

The enmity of Elizabeth did not prevent the unfortunate Mary from turning her eyes to England. Judging of the heart of her rival by her own, ſhe flattered herſelf that the ſight of a queen perſecuted by her ſubjects, reduced to the loweſt ſtate of miſery, and raiſing her ſuppliant hands, would diſarm hatred, and make a protectreſs of an enemy: but ſhe very ſoon perceived that ſhe had formed too favourable an opinion of the daughter of Henry VIII.

Elizabeth looked upon her happineſs as complete when ſhe found herſelf miſtreſs of the fate of the rival of her ſceptre, her wit and beauty. She had not the leaſt idea of the generous deſire of protecting her, ſhe thought of nothing but the pleaſure of puniſhing the queen of Scotland for the advantages ſhe derived from nature, of putting it out of her power to aſſert her well-founded

pretenſions,

pretenſions, of confirming eternal motives of diviſion between the ſubjects and their ſovereign, and of cementing by thoſe diſſentions, the Engliſh authority and power at Edinburgh. Revenge, ambition and jealouſy, the three ſtrongeſt paſſions of the queen of England concurred in the ſame project; to blaſt the character of Mary, to retain her in captivity and deſtroy her, were the only thoughts that engroſſed the mind of Elizabeth. She no ſooner had her in her power than ſhe placed her guards round her, impriſoned her, and began a proſecution, of which there was no example in the world: a foreign princeſs made herſelf the judge between the queen and her people, cited both before her tribunal, and obliged the regent of an independent kingdom to obey her ſummons, and appear as an evidence againſt his ſoverign.

The accounts given of this ſtrange affair are ſo confuſed and contradictory, that the moſt penetrating eyes can diſcern nothing clearly through the miſt of partiality on either ſide.

If we give credit to the calviniſts, or conſult a French writer, reſpectable for his learning and probity, the adultery of Mary was proved, her guilt as to the murder of her huſband evinced, and reſpect only for the rank of the criminal prevented the Engliſh tribunal from publicly condemning her: if we belief the catholics, the innocence of Mary was clearly demonſtated, the letters on which the accuſation was grounded were forged; the facts, the ſtyle and dates proved the impoſition; Murray himſelf, who perſecuted the queen, was convicted

victed of being the author of the crime; if Elizabeth refuſed to paſs a definitive ſentence, the reaſon was, ſhe was diſappointed in her expectations, and was unwilling her enemy ſhould enjoy the honour of ſeeing her innocence triumphant.

INNOCENT or guilty, Mary was ſhut up in a fortreſs, deprived of all hopes of ever re-aſcending the throne, and for twenty years ſuffered all the miſeries of a captivity that daily became more cruel; Murray himſelf, whoſe artifices ſeemed to triumph, had no more than the title of regent, and was an actual ſlave to the will of Elizabeth. That powerful queen, by terrifying the friends of Mary with threats againſt her life, by intimidating the rebels with ſhewing them that the princeſs ready to make her appearance in Scotland, kept all the factions in awe and reigned equally at London and Edinburgh. Impatient to ſecure her work, and ſenſible how neceſſary it was to humble the family of her priſoner in France, ſhe redoubled her efforts againſt the Guiſes; ſhe aſſiſted their enemies with advice, money and troops; ſhe formed a ſtrict alliance with the king of Navarre, and became the ſureſt protectreſs of the rights of that hero. On the other hand, ſhe raiſed bulwarks in both hemiſpheres againſt the formidable power of Philip; ſhe continued to protect Holland, and ſupported that republic againſt the gold of the monarch of the Indies, the valour of the Spaniards and genius of Farneſe. She, at the ſame time, kept a watchful eye upon the motions

motions of Rome, and detected, fruſtrated and puniſhed every plot and intrigue.

In the mean time, pity for the ſufferings of Mary daily gave birth to new plots, which being diſconcerted by the prudence of Elizabeth ſerved only to rivet the chains of the royal priſoner more cloſely, and to ruin thoſe who attempted to break them. Norfolk, from having the honour to be the firſt peer of England, was encouraged to ſolicit the hand of the captive queen; he received a pardon the firſt time, but having tranſgreſſed again, he expiated his temerity on the ſcaffold. A variety of ſeditions produced by ſimilar motives were extinguiſhed in the blood of the authors; at length an obſure man, whom intemperate zeal made the blind inſtrument of a laſt conſpiracy, became a new victim, and occaſioned the ruin of the unfortunate princeſs whom he had endeavoured to ſet at liberty.

A second trial was now commenced no leſs extraordinary, but more barbarous and more unjuſt than the firſt. Mary was accuſed of having attempted to deprive Elizabeth of her crown and life, and carried before judges that were her moſt violent enemies, and ſlaves to the will of her enemy. She in vain urged that her privileges as a foreigner and a queen, exempted her from the power of the laws of England; in vain ſhe demonſtrated that her judges were men who wiſhed her deſtruction; ſhe in vain proved that Walſingham, who had long thirſted for her blood, was the ſoul of the tribunal; in vain ſhe ſhewed the falſhood of the circumſtances and arguments that were

were produced, and the contradictory evidence of her accuſers; ſhe in vain claimed the evidence founded on the laws of nature, of being confronted with the witneſſes who had ſworn againſt her; a ſentence, which even her implacable enemy hefitated to ſign, condemned Mary to loſe her head, and this ſentence, ſtrange as it may appear, was nevertheleſs executed.

Thus periſhed, after twenty years captivity, a princeſs, the moſt memorable example that ever appeared of the fragility of human greatneſs. Born to the throne of Scotland, educated on that of France, with inconteſtable pretenſions to the ſceptre of England, adorned with every perſonal charm, every mental accompliſhment, and the nobleſt qualities of the heart; Mary ſeemed to be a diſtinguiſhed example of the favours of fortune; ſhe was, however, a remarkable inſtance of calamity. A fatal ſenſibility, though accompanied with a thouſand good qualities, betrayed her into a momentary weakneſs, which robbed her of happineſs and perhaps innocence. But if the purity of her life was obſcured by ſome ſhades, which it is not eaſy to remove, her death was truly heroic; ſhe met her fate with a dignity of ſoul that extorted applauſe and tears from her moſt inveterate enemies.

Thoſe affairs were followed by the impotent reſentment of the king of Scotland, which was unſupported by courage and appeaſed with the hopes of ſucceeding to the murderess of his mother; next appeared the vain menaces of the pope, who publicly excommunicated Elizabeth, and applauded

plauded her in private; and afterwards the unſucceſsful attempts of the catholics, which ſerved only to increaſe the power of their perſecutreſs and aggravate their own oppreſſion. A danger of a much more formidable nature to England was gathering on the ſide of Spain.

PHILIP II, provoked at the aſſiſtance which Elizabeth had given to the States General, reſolved to puniſh that queen, and had the moſt ſpecious pretext for gratifying his revenge. He took occaſion to avow himſelf the avenger of the blood of Mary Stuart, and pretended that his reſolution was to exterminate the murderers of a catholic queen and a relation. His preparations were anſwerable to his capacity, his power and hatred. The moſt profound ſecrecy concealed the deſtination of the ſquadrons that were equipping in his ports, and alarmed Europe, uncertain where the ſtorm was to fall, did not learn till the ſhips had ſailed, that the moſt formidable fleet that ever appeared on the ocean was coaſting along Portugal, and ſteering towards the North. Twenty thouſand land troops were to join the duke of Parma in the channel, and the talents of that illuſtrious captain with this army and part of his own troops, ſeemed to inſure ſucceſs.

THE genius of Elizabeth now ſhone forth in all its glory: prudence, activity, intrepidity and every talent on which the ſecurity of ſtates depends, where diſplayed on this perilous occaſion. She had the art to unite in the ſame plan of defence the moſt oppoſite parties; catholics and proteſtants marched under the ſame banners, and mutually

mutually diſputed the honour of ſuperior zeal. All the powers of the ſtate were ſet in motion with admirable expedition. The queen herſelf appeared at the head of the troops, and, notwithſtanding her age and ſex, was ready to ſhare in the dangers of her ſubjects. The navy, the moſt important reſource at this criſis, was equipped with ſuch amazing celerity, as to appear a like prodigy. Drake commanded the fleet, and boldly advanced againſt thoſe armaments ſtiled invincible from their aſtoniſhing ſtrength and numbers. Happily the very elements ſeemed to conſpire with the wiſdom of the queen of England. The winds and ſtorms diſperſed a part of the enemy's ſhips; they were unacquainted with thoſe ſeas, and miſtook their courſe, and to complete the misfortune, either through the ignorance or pride of the Spaniſh admiral, the ſhips of Philip were not ſuffered to join the duke of Parma in time. This famous fleet, ſhattered already by the ſtorm, was ſoon after roughly treated by the abilities of Drake and the valour of the men that fought under his command. A few ſhips with difficulty returned to the ports of Philip, and carried back the news of the melancholy fate of his ſubjects and of the deſtruction of his hopes.

The danger that menaced England contributed to raiſe her power. The glorious triumph obtained over ſo formidable a monarch inſpired her ſons with the moſt exalted ſpirit; nothing appeared impoſſible to them, and no efforts were ſuperior to their courage. Armed veſſels daily ſailed from every harbour in the iſland, and carried

ried fire and ſword into the territories of Philip, diſplayed the Engliſh flag in all quarters of the world, and prepared the empire of the ſea for their deſcendants. Eſſex ravaged the coaſts of Portugal, formed and executed the plan of beſieging Cadiz, took that city ſword in hand, advanced to the gates of Seville, and made Philip tremble even in his capital.

FORBISHER entered North America, took poſſeſſion of ſome of the Antilles, and penetrated into the gulphs next the pole. Drake appeared in both hemiſpheres, took the Spaniſh galleons, ſailed to Mexico in ſearch of the precious metals of that country, viſited all the ſouthern coaſts of the new world, and carried terror into Peru, Chili, the Azores and Philippine iſlands; after being the firſt Engliſhman that ſailed round the world, he returned to his native country laden with the moſt magnificent ſpoils that ever had been taken by a conqueror.

LANCASTER plundered the opulent city of Fernanbouc in Brazil; Raleigh, Hawkins and Norris cruiſed in the South Seas, and took a great number of ſhips with incredible riches. Cavendiſh, at his return to England, entered the Thames with a ſhew of triumph, his ſoldiers and ſailors were dreſſed in ſilk, his ſails were of ſilk damaſk, and his fore yard was adorned with a flag of gold brocade.

ALL thoſe expeditions were not equally ſucceſsful, but they all formed the Engliſh for maritime affairs, and inſpired them with that ardour for commerce and navigation, which has made them

ſo formidable ever ſince. Beſides, as they had to contend with the richeſt nation in the world, the captures they made were extremely valuable, and the opulence that thence reſulted gave new vigour to every part of the ſtate.

In this exalted degree of proſperity, to which the daughter of Henry VIII was raiſed, abſolute miſtreſs as ſhe was of England, all powerful in Scotland, the ſupport of France, the protection of Holland, the terror of Philip, and reſpected by the reſt of the world, that fortunate queen imagined there was ſtill ſomething wanting to complete her happineſs. Ireland was inhabited by a people whom their enemies ſtyled barbarous, becauſe their virtuous ſimplicity was uncontaminated with the fraudulent arts and intrigues of policy; they were deemed rebellious, becauſe their generous ſpirit continually ſtruggled againſt an unjuſt and foreign yoke; they were charged with being reſtleſs, becauſe they claimed the protection of the laws which was refuſed them by their oppreſſors; they were reproached with ſuperſtition and fanaticiſm, becauſe their zeal for the religion of their anceſtors would not allow them to tear down wantonly both the altar and the throne.

This people, ſurpriſed by Henry II, and ſeduced by their too great credulity for their clergy, were ſtripped of part of their ancient poſſeſſions. As ſoon as they recovered from their firſt ſurpriſe, they endeavoured to ſhake off an authority that had no other foundation but violence. Without arms, policy, induſtry or union, this un-

unfortunate nation ſtruggled for four hundred years, with no other reſource but their courage, againſt all the power of their oppreſſors. Henry VIII had attempted to complete the conqueſt, but failing in his deſign, the fate of the Engliſh in that iſland became thence more uncertain; and their cities being expoſed to continual attacks, made their condition precarious and uneaſy.

ELIZABETH was provoked to ſee this people alone contemn her authority, and undertook to ſubject them. The flower of her troops croſſed over into Ireland under the command of Eſſex her favourite, who was looked upon as the beſt of her generals. The ſucceſs was not equal to her hopes, the ſplendid talents of Eſſex were born down by the courageous ſimplicity of his enemies. The conqueror of Cadiz attacked, vanquiſhed and obliged to remain inactive, ſaw the laurels he had reaped on the banks of the Tagus blaſted on the borders of the Shannon; and the queen, notwithſtanding all her love, was under the neceſſity of recalling him to London. Mountjoy, his ſucceſſor, took more effectual meaſures, he attacked the enemy in their own way, obtained deciſive advantages over them, and by the wiſdom that accompanied his valour at length reduced the greateſt part of the iſland. The gallant earl of Deſmond was obliged to retire to another country. O Neal, after defending the liberty of his country for ten years, was forced to yield to Elizabeth; and the ſubmiſſion of that brave officer deſtroyed all the hopes of his nation.

WHILST this princeſs exhibited ſo glorious and fortunate a reign, the moſt poignant grief was preying upon her heart, and inſenſibly leading her to the tomb. For ever unfortunate in the choice of her lovers, ſhe ſaw the earl of Leiceſter diſgrace himſelf by his conduct in Holland. A more ſentimental paſſion flattered her with a happier lot: the wit, courage, knowlege and illuſtrious birth of the earl of Eſſex made the nation applaud her partiality for the latter; but by the pride, imprudence and fiery temper of this new lover, the peace of Elizabeth was again ſoon diſturbed.

PROVOKED at his capricious behaviour, ſhe endeavoured to correct him by moderate chaſtiſement; but that haughty nobleman, enraged at what he thought an inſult, and liſtening only to the dictates of reſentment, broke out into offenſive language and indecent threats. The numerous enemies of the earl having inflamed the anger of the queen, an open rupture ſeemed to have divided them for ever. Eſſex was ſent to priſon and fined; he was deeply affected at this diſgrace, but diſſembled his ſentiments for ſome time. As his enemies ſtill perſecuted him, and he ſaw no hopes of regaining the favour of a woman who had, in a manner, adored him, he loſt all temper, and adding to the moſt culpable declarations deſigns ſtill more criminal, conceived the extravagant project of ſubverting the form of government, of chaining down the power of Elizabeth in ſome ſort upon the very throne, of calling in her ſucceſſor, and placing the crown

on

on his head, or at leaſt giving him all the authority. Being detected in this conſpiracy, he endeavoured in vain to excite the people to rebel, for though they loved him, their affection for their queen was ſtill greater; and, as he was taken in arms, a ſevere but juſt ſentence condemned him to loſe his head. The hand of Elizabeth trembled for a long time before ſhe could ſign the warrant for his death; but teazed by the enemies of the earl, and irritated at his obſtinacy and pride in the reluctance he ſhewed to ſolicit a pardon, ſhe at length, in her anger, ſigned the ſentence, which her heart afterwards revoked a thouſand times.

Resentment was ſcarce gratified with the blood of the unfortunate victim, when love revived with new vigour. Grief, remorſe and deſpair were the only ſentiments that engroſſed her mind, and ſo many mortifications conſuming a body already debilitated by years, ſhe died full of the diſtracting idea of having deſtroyed her lover. Thus weakneſs cloſed one of the wiſeſt reigns we meet with in hiſtory. Blind hatred alone can refuſe the homage of admiration to this princeſs. Penetration, extenſive capacity, clearneſs of underſtanding, juſt diſcernment, foreſight, activity, art, intrepidity in danger, unſhaken firmneſs in misfortune, moderation in proſperity, judicious economy that carefully avoided expending the ſmalleſt matters unprofitably, and freely parted with the moſt conſiderable ſums when neceſſary; indefatigable application to buſineſs, love for her people, and a profound know-

lege of what conſtituted the real glory of the prince and the ſubject; in ſhort, numberleſs talents and illuſtrious qualities entitled Elizabeth to the moſt exalted praiſes.

Whilst ſhe was a private perſon, ſhe had the art to conceal a part of her genius, and, by this diſſimulation ſo difficult to ſelf-love, eſcaped the dangers that threatened her. When ſhe was raiſed to the throne, ſhe ſeaſonably diſplayed all her great qualities; ſhe appeaſed diſturbances, changed religion, made her authority abſolute, governed with diſpotic ſway a people that were enthuſiaſts in the cauſe of liberty, and at the ſame time gained their warmeſt affections; ſhe eſtabliſhed admirable order in the finances, formed a marine, created commerce, protected, animated and improved the fine arts, and made her reign the epoch of the glory of England, both as to policy and learning.

If we view this princeſs in the interior of her palace, ſhe no longer appears in the ſame advantageous light. She was harſh and moroſe to her attendants, violent in council, inconſtant in her connections, capricious even with reſpect to the moſt ſolemn regulations, ſo vain as to fancy herſelf the fineſt woman in Europe, notwithſtanding her many perſonal defects; ſo weak as to expect adoration while ſhe was ſinking under the infirmities of old age, paſſionately fond of dreſs, envious and cruel to the objects of her envy, implacable in her reſentment, impenetrable in her deceitful arts, and like her father, to whom however ſhe was much ſuperior, exhibited the

ſingular mixture of the moſt ſublime qualities with the moſt deteſtable vices. In a word, ſhe had all the talents of a great man, the qualities of a good king, with all the littleneſs and vices of a malignant coquet; and her cruel and unjuſt treatment of the queen of Scotland, who flew to her for protection, will ever remain a monument of the depravity of her heart.

The ſon of the unfortunate Mary Stuart, nominated by will and appointed by the laws, inherited the ſceptre of Elizabeth. A memorable revolution happened on this occaſion. Scotland, that had always been a ſeparate kingdom and the implacable enemy of England, was now united with the latter for ever; and James I, as ſoon as he arrived in London having united thoſe two kingdoms under the title of Great Britain, made one nation of both people.

A murdered father, a mother inſulted, impriſoned and expoſed to ſuch indignities as had no example, and his native country convulſed with diſcord and rage, were the objects that preſented themſelves to the eyes of James at his firſt entrance into the world. The flames of ſedition continued to blaze round his cradle, and the blood of his guardian was ſhed by the hands of aſſaſſins.

He had ſcarce taken hold of the reins of government, when he was arreſted in the very midſt of his court by ſubjects whom Elizabeth encouraged to this daring inſolence. He found means to eſcape out of priſon, but was very near being carried off by the intrigues of that princeſs, and

ſoon after learned that the head of Mary had fallen on the ſcaffold. Reſtrained by factions that ſhook his throne as well as by motives of policy, and ſurrounded himſelf by continual ſnares that were laid for his liberty and life, he could only bewail that horrid murder.

At length he aſcended the throne of England, appointed by the will of that very enemy who had diſturbed his life, and ſacrificed his mother. Without remarkable vices or eminent virtues, poſſeſſed of ſome talents, but for the moſt part foreign to affairs of government, James confined his views to the object of procuring peace at home and with his neighbours; relinquiſhing the great deſigns of Elizabeth, he left the Houſes of Auſtria and Bourbon to their mutual threats and diſſentions, and made England a power as little connected by policy with the reſt of Europe, as ſhe was with the continent by her natural ſituation.

He found three religions in the ſtate who violently deteſted each other; the church of England the ruling church, which he preferred; the rigid calviniſts or preſbyterians, whoſe inſolence he dreaded; and the catholics, whom he hated through prejudice. Notwithſtanding thoſe different ſentiments, influenced by timid prudence, he at firſt treated all thoſe ſects with mildneſs which he thought the moſt likely method to conciliate their hearts. But a ſingular conſpiracy made him ſenſible that falſe zeal is a monſter which nothing can appeaſe. Their common hatred connected the moſt oppoſite parties againſt the monarch;

monarch; the preſbyterians penetrating into his ſentiments towards them, and ſome catholics, who were provoked at not having obtained the privileges which they expected under the ſon of one of their female martyrs, united their reſentment to deſtroy the ſovereign and crown a princeſs of his family.

They choſe Raleigh for their leader, whoſe indifference for all ſects was notorious, but who was reſpected for his diſtinguiſhed ſervices, eminent dignities, exalted genius and extenſive knowlege. The diſcovery of the plot deprived Raleigh of liberty and his accomplices of life, and ſo far inflamed the naturally intolerant temper of the monarch, that he ſuffered all the ſeverity of the laws to be exerted againſt diſſenters. The famous gun-powder-plot is ſaid to have happened at this time. It has been aſſerted that a ſmall number of fanatics endeavoured to gratify their revenge by the blackeſt of crimes; that a quantity of powder was ſecretly laid under the parliament-houſe in order to blow up the king, lords and commons; it is added, that the diſcovery of this horrid plot was owing to ſome hints dropped by one of the conſpirators through compaſſion for a lord that was his friend.

Whatever idea may be formed of this conſpiracy, James believed it true, and after puniſhing thoſe who were accuſed of having been the authors, he extended his ſeverity to all catholics, who were charged with being accomplices by the voice of prejudice and hatred. Not ſatisfied with perſecuting them with the arm of

ſecular

ſecular power, he took up his pen to write againſt them, and the monarch of three kingdoms entered the fields of argument with divines, and ſeemed to look for no other glory but that of diſputing with them.

SPAIN.

Spain had now loſt Philip II, a prince who did ſo little with the greateſt reſources, whilſt the princeſs his enemy, with very inconſiderable means performed the moſt glorious actions. Philip, dreaded by Europe, whoſe peace he diſturbed, was more terrible ſtill to his own family. He put his ſon to death; it was univerſally believed that he had poiſoned his conſort; his concubines experienced the moſt horrid effects of his jealouſy; moſt of his enemies periſhed by the hands of aſſaſſins, and the latter were diſpatched with the poniard.

Philip III had neither the talents or vices of his predeceſſor, and was not qualified to purſue his great deſigns; he was juſt, benevolent and reſpectable for many virtues, but weak, ſuperſtitions and entirely governed by a miniſter of as little capacity as his maſter. The court of Madrid devoted to the clergy was now taken up with nothing but trifling objects, and the barbarous ceremonies of the inquiſition were become the only entertainments there.

The viceroys, emboldened by the weakneſs of the miniſtry, involved the ſtate in criminal intrigues, which after making the ſovereign odious, expoſed him to contempt when he diſavowed them;

them; the governors of the provinces, encouraged by the goodneſs of the maſter, became imperious tyrants and forced the people into rebellion; by the neglect or ill-management of the finances, the prince was poor and the people oppreſſed; the troops mutinied for want of their pay; the marine was decayed and commerce languiſhed; induſtry, arts and agriculture were ſucceeded by indolence; continual emigrations leſſened population; and at length, influenced by the ſolicitations of the inquiſitors, who thirſted for the ſpoils of the Moors, the devout monarch, by an edict worthy of a tyrant, expelled from the country 1,200,000 inhabitants, who weret heonly people he had to cultivate it.

THE UNITED PROVINCES.

The United Provinces profited by the errors and misfortunes of their ancient maſters, and daily cemented the edifice of their liberty. The gallant Maurice, as profound a politician as his father, equally active and intrepid, and a more able and ſucceſsful commander, ſtrenghthened the riſing republic by prudent and glorious meaſures, by giving and avoiding battle on proper occaſions, by his ſkill in the operations of ſieges for which he was equally admired, whether in defending the places committed to his care and fidelity by his country, or in attacking, ſurprizing or reducing a ſtrong hold of the enemy.

The appearance of Spinola, whoſe talents balanced the ſucceſſes between both parties, made the objects more intereſting. The reſt of the chriſtian

chriſtian ſtates, who had lately recovered tranquility by the peace of Vervins, turned their eyes to that corner of the world, where two of the moſt illuſtrious generals of the age fought againſt each other; one commanding the armies of a powerful king; the other at the head of a people inſpired with all the enthuſiaſm of liberty recently acquired. Their camps were become the ſchools to which the young ſoldiers of every nation reſorted, in order to improve themſelves under ſuch able maſters.

The Dutch fleets, at the ſame time, appeared in different quarters of the world, diſputed for the empire of the ſea, plundered the Philippines and Antilles, Brazil and Moluccas, ſubjected extenſive iſlands, founded powerful colonies, and formed a ſecond Holland ſix thouſand leagues from the firſt. This infant republic, though ſtill plunged in the flames of diſcord and war, was already famous throughout the world for her wealth and power. Her conſtancy at length triumphed over all the efforts of her oppreſſors; they were the firſt to ſolicit a truce, the conditions of which ſhe dictated, and her independence was acknowleged.

GERMANY.

Germany was now in perfect tranquility; ſhe had never enjoyed ſo great a calm. Ferdinand I governed with ſo much wiſdom as to reconcile the different factions, and ſuppreſs even the quarrels on account of religion. Under his ſon Maximilian II, the peace of the Germanic body was

interrupted

interrupted only by the crimes of Grumbach, a wretch who found protection with the princes of the houſe of Saxony, and after ſome ſucceſs, involved the Duke of Gotha, his protector, in his ruin.

Mild, humane and generous; the friend of every virtue, and protector of all the arts; the liberal promoter of the ſciences which he cultivated, the peaceable Rodolph II was bleſſed by all parties; his reign was diſturbed only by the ambition of his brother Matthias, who raiſed a rebellion in Hungary, and ſtripped him of that crown. It was under this emperor the rich ſucceſſion of the dutchies of Cleves and Juliers was opened. The Houſes of Saxony, Brandenbourg, and Palatine all claimed this inheritance againſt the Houſe of Auſtria, who endeavoured to get poſſeſſion. France oppoſed the pretenſions of the latter; and, in order to diſappoint them, Henry the *Great* ſupported the Palatines and thoſe of Brandenbourg. That hero, at the ſame time intereſted the chief powers of the North in their quarrel: whilſt Spain was preparing to ſupport the imperial family, that was a branch of the houſe of her ſovereigns. This was the origin of that long and bloody war that afterwards ſet all Europe in a flame, and made ſuch a change in her political ſyſtem.

HUNGARY.

John Sigismund and his mother maintained themſelves in the part of Hungary they poſſeſſed, while the arms of Soliman protected them; but, after the death of that hero, John was forced to com-

compromiſe matters with his rival, and obliged to remain ſatisfied with Tranſilvania, where a new misfortune put an end to his life and produced freſh troubles.

The Auſtrian inſiſted on the treaty by which he was nominated ſucceſſor to the laſt ſovereign; but was oppoſed by the courage of the Tranſilvanians, who deteſted his government. Stephen Bathori, by the almoſt unanimous voice of the people, was placed at their head; his valour ſecured the liberty of Tranſilvania, and eſtabliſhed an independent principality in that province. Hungary, in the mean while, a continual prey to the contentions between two empires, exhibited a conſtant fluctuation of ſucceſs on the ſide of Auſtria and the Ottoman, and expoſed that unhappy country to all the horrors and ravages of war.

DENMARK.

Denmark enjoyed happineſs under Chriſtian III, who, diſguſted with the uncertain glory of arms, at length preferred the generous ambition of making his people happy. His ſon, Frederic II, reſumed the war, ſucceeded in Livonia; leſs fortunate againſt Sweden, returned to peace, and devoted his time to the cultivation of the ſublimer ſciences. Chriſtian IV inherited his taſte, began a reign of peace which he conſecrated to the felicity of his people and the progreſs of learning.

SWEDEN, POLAND and RUSSIA.

Sweden triumphant under Guſtavus Vaſa, whoſe vigour was not diminiſhed by old age, in loſing

loſing him loſt her glory and happineſs. Sinking under the attacks of a violent fever, that great man contemplated his approaching diſſolution without emotion; and two hours before his death, dictated inſtructions on the moſt important affairs. Firm to a degree of prodigy in adverſity, aſtoniſhing in reſources, inexhauſtible in expedients, intrepid in the field, admirable in council, and twice the deliverer of his country, Guſtavus, in ſome ſort, created his nation, procured happineſs to his people, and laid the foundation of their glory.

ERIC, the unworthy ſon of ſo illuſtrious a father, aſcended the throne and behaved like a tyrant. He butchered his own family, and oppreſſed his ſubjects, who entered into a conſpiracy with his brothers, took up arms againſt him, depoſed and ſhut him up in a priſon, where he was ſacrificed to his ſucceſſor. John, ſtained with the blood of his brother, diſtinguiſhed himſelf by his zeal for the catholic religion, which he attempted to re-eſtabliſh in his country; made himſelf odious to the Swedes, who curtailed his authority, and was conſoled for thoſe diſappointments by the crown of Poland that was conferred on him.

POLAND loſt Sigiſmond Auguſt, who made the ſceptre ſo reſpectable, and with him periſhed the name of the Jagellons, who had governed there for three centuries. The election of the duke of Anjou ſoon occaſioned a new interregnum, for that prince becoming heir to the crown of France, returned to his native country to meet with troubles,

troubles, contempt and misfortunes. The emperor Maximilian entered the liſts with the reſt of the candidates, but was thrown out by the faction of Stephen Bathori, the ſovereign of Tranſilvania, who had ſo well maintained the independence of that country.

A SPLENDID reign was then opened in Poland. Rebellion was ſuppreſſed, and the laws recovered their vigour. The Auſtrians were repelled from the frontiers; the Muſcovites driven beyond the Wolga, and the Tartars attacked and defeated even in their marſhes. The Coſſacs, an ungovernable body of ſeveral barbarous nations, were ſubjected, diſciplined and attached to Poland, and became a bulwark to that country againſt the Ottoman empire. The famous Zamoſki, ſo well known in the annals of literature for his taſte for letters, ſhared in the labours and glory of his ſovereign.

AFTER this glorious reign the nobles made choice of John of Sweden, and conferred their ſceptre on that prince, who was unable to manage that of his anceſtors. His ſon Sigiſmund, the heir of his two crowns, more zealous ſtill to re-eſtabliſh the ancient worſhip, provoked Sweden to take up arms againſt him, and loſt all his authority. Boldneſs increaſing in proportion to its ſucceſs, the Swedes loſt all reſpect for the throne, obliged Sigiſmund to reſign it, and placed the crown on the head of Charles of Sudermania, the ſon of the great Guſtavus and uncle to the monarch. A bloody war was now kindled between both nations. Poland, with all her forces,

ſeconded

ſeconded her king in his endeavours to recover the ſceptre he had been deprived of. Sweden ſupported, with equal courage, the new ſovereign ſhe had elected. After ſeveral battles fought with various ſucceſs, Charles was left in poſſeſſion of the crown he had obtained, and Sigiſmond was in hopes of repairing his loſſes by the acquiſition of a third crown.

RUSSIA was a prey to all the horrors of a civil war. The firm and terrible reign of Baſilowitz II had been followed by that of Theodore, a prince contemptible in peace and unfortunate in war. After the death of that weak czar the empire was agitated by the ſtrangeſt ſcenes. Borris, vain of the alliance he had contracted with his ſovereign, had young Demetrius, the ſecond ſon of Baſilowitz, aſſaſſinated; and ſtained with his blood, had the boldneſs to ſeize upon the crown. The deſire of ſupporting the uſurpation, which generally leads to tyranny, having urged him to the perpetration of many crimes, he became odious to the people, who wiſhed for an opportunity of ſhaking off the yoke.

A YOUNG adventurer educated in Poland, taking advantage of this general diſſatisfaction, and of his reſemblance to the real Demetrius, had the confidence to aſſume the name of that prince; and by a tale artfully formed was ſo lucky as to deceive ſome public noblemen. Supported by their aſſiſtance, he entered Ruſſia and formed a powerful party, which daily increaſing by the hatred of the people againſt their tyrant, placed the impoſtor on the throne; but his weak hand

was unable to govern the helm for which it was not formed. Blindly led by the Polanders, his benefactors, every thing was regulated agreeable to their intereſts and maxims; the ancient religion was proſcribed; the Romiſh worſhip, though deteſted by the people, became that of the empire; the cuſtoms held in veneration for many ages were deſpiſed and aboliſhed; ſtrangers occupied all places of honour and profit, and engroſſed all favours; their rapine was authorized, and their violence applauded by the ſovereign, who was either too blindly devoted to his protectors or too timid with his accomplices.

Moſcow was become a theatre of lawleſs robbers, who ſpared neither fortune, rank or modeſty. The Ruſſians feeling with indignation a tyranny more cruel than that from which they had been delivered, and convinced moreover of the impoſture of the new czar, were reſolved to ſhake off a yoke no leſs oppreſſive than diſgraceful; and, with their countryman Zuſki at their head, attacked the uſurper with the foreigners his protectors. The palace was forced, the falſe Demetrius butchered, and moſt of the Polanders mingled their blood with that of the tyrant they had raiſed.

Zuski, whoſe ſucceſs was rewarded with the diadem, ſoon found a new rival to diſpute the empire. Another Demetrius, who aſſerted himſelf to be the firſt, made his appearance on the ſcene; and inſiſted that by a lucky ſtratagem he had eſcaped from the rage of the murderer; the ſecond impoſtor, more politic and valiant than the

firſt,

firſt, was marching to avenge his pretended wrongs and obtain the empire; he was followed by an army augmented by the Polanders, who joyfully embraced the opportunity of retaliating upon Ruſſia the calamities their countrymen had ſuffered in that country.

Sigismond, who ſuffered the quarrel to begin under the ſtandards of an adventurer, was reſolved to take advantage of the revolution in order to conquer Ruſſia; and, under the pretext of ſupporting the rights of the pretended Demetrius, advanced rapidly towards Moſcow. Zuſki, in the mean time, menaced with deſtruction by thoſe two powerful parties, applied for relief to Sweden who undertook his defence with zeal; thus the North was in flames for an impoſtor, and a bloody war involved the three principal monarchies of thoſe quarters in confuſion.

ITALY.

The greateſt part of Italy was in the hands of the chief of the Houſe of Auſtria; her princes had their eyes fixed upon that formidable neighbour, and regulated their maxims by his, either to avoid the yoke with which he menaced them or to profit by his favours.

Paul IV ventured to brave Philip, but found in the duke of Alva a conqueror that baffled all his efforts; and the view of thoſe chains with which one of his predeceſſors had been loaded, obliged him to ſubmit to a treaty, and though he ſeemed to dictate the terms, he became a ſlave to the will of the monarch. This was the pon-

tiff who, by his imprudent and arrogant conduct, provoked the haughty ſpirit of Elizabeth, and accelerated the change of religion in England; it was he who, in an enlightened age, attempted to revive the pretenſions of the tiara over the regal diadem; and the ſame who regulating all things by the ſeverity of his diſpoſition, made his memory ſo odious that the people in a rage inſulted his aſhes and pulled down his ſtatues.

The nephews of his predeceſſors, thoſe tyrants who had deſtroyed all order in Rome, were condemned to the ſcaffold by Pius IV. and the purple that adorned one of the criminals could not preſerve him from a ſimilar fate. This pontiff cloſed the council of Trent by the care of his nephew Boromæus, the illuſtrious archbiſhop of Milan a prelate no leſs celebrated in the annals of the church for the ſanctity of his life, than diſtinguiſhed in thoſe of humanity for his benevolence and charity; he was truly the father of the wretched and unfortunate.

Pius V, by eminent virtues, gave luſtre to the obſcurity of his birth, adorned the throne to which he was raiſed with ſublime qualities, edified the world by his piety, and would have been ſtill more glorious but for the auſterity of his diſpoſition. He was unfortunate enough not to diſtinguiſh between the merit of zeal and the rigour of perſecution, he kindled many fires in Rome, and purſued the enemies of his ſee with all the fury of a mercileſs bigot. A remarkable event happened under this pontificate.

Spain and Venice, united by his voice againſt the enemies of the chriſtian name, triumphed

over

over all the forces of the Turks at Lepanto, releaſed 20,000 captives from chains and ſlavery, and made the very ſeraglio tremble. The throne of Selim tottered, and eſcaped ruin only by the jealous policy of Philip, who reſtrained the valour of John of Auſtria, the capacity of Moroſini the Venetian, and the zeal of Marcus Columna.

Gregory XIII, diſtinguiſhed by his extraordinary knowlege of juriſprudence, conciliated all hearts at Rome by the mildneſs of his adminiſtration, and gained immortal fame by the reformation of the calendar, called after him the Gregorian calendar.

Felix Peretti, born in the loweſt condition, educated through compaſſion in an obſcure cloiſter, ſucceſſively raiſed to the moſt eminent offices of his order, a monk of a violent but irreproachable character, a ſuperior deteſted, yet ſtrictly regular, a haughty and ſevere inquiſitor, was at length decorated with the purple by Pius V, who liked him for a ſimilarity of diſpoſition. Having attained to this elevated rank by extorting eſteem, he conceived the ſingular project of aſcending ſtill higher by inſpiring contempt. Having ſucceeded by this artifice through the intereſt of ſome ambitious cardinals, who made no doubt of governing him entirely, he laughed at their credulity in his turn, and, under the name of Sixtus Quintus, the friar of Mantalto ſurprized the world by the wiſdom and vigour of his adminiſtration.

The inſolence of the great was repreſſed, the licentiouſneſs of the people reſtrained, and the

public ſafety reſtored: juſtice reſumed her ſeat at the tribunals; guilt trembled under an inexorable avenger, who was a ſtranger to the ſentiments of pity and forgiveneſs; and the blood ſhed on the ſcaffolds ſtruck a ſalutary terror into every breaſt. Rome was improved and adorned by the ſame hand that made her tremble; an aqueduct, a work worthy of the times of Auguſtus ſupplied thoſe quarters of the city with water where that neceſſary element was before wanting; an obeliſk, a precious monument of antiquity, was dug out of the ruins under which it had been long buried; ſumptuous palaces were raiſed; the churches were decorated with magnificence; and the Vatican library depoſited in an edifice worthy of its fame and celebrity. Arts, ſciences, and induſtry found a generous protector in the ſovereign. The forces of the ſtate were augmented, and, notwithſtanding many expenſive works, ſeveral millions, the fruits of admirable œconomy, were laid up in the treaſury. At the ſame time the moſt profound policy pointed out his true intereſts to Sixtus, and concealed his deſigns from the moſt penetrating eyes; by his ſecret intrigues he checked the enormous power of Philip, while he openly loaded him with benedictions, and leagued againſt him with Henry and Elizabeth, whom he excommunicated. He was a great prince, and great pope, but in his private character odious and contemptible; he united the talents of a ſovereign with all the littleneſs of a monk, and the cruelties of a tyrant.

THE pontificate of Urban VII was too ſhort to aſcertain his character. Gregory XIV, by nature humane, and cruel through zeal, was the protector of the inquiſition, and became an accomplice in the exceſſes of the confederacy by the favours he beſtowed on that party. Innocent IX was happy enough to conciliate all hearts during the few days he reigned, and carried with him to the tomb the reſpect of Rome and the tears of the church.

THE moſt benignant virtues aſcended the throne of St. Peter with Clement VIII. This pontiff was dear to literature and France; deaf to the clamours and intreaties of the court of Madrid, he gave to the great Henry an abſolution that was neceſſary to the happineſs of the monarch, and to the tranquility of his ſubjects.

LEO XI, of the family of Medicis, beloved even by the enemies of his ſee, was taken from the world ſome days after his elevation, when he had given hopes of ſeeing revived in him the great pope whoſe name he had aſſumed. Borgheſe, who, by the name of Paul V, ſucceeded thoſe beneficent princes, diſdained to imitate their prudent conduct, forgot the difference of times, was blind to every thing but his exalted rank, treated ſovereigns with haughtineſs, and expoſed his dignity by an imprudent quarrel with Venice.

VENICE.

BY exerting a proper ſpirit with ſome, a condeſcenſion towards others, and wiſdom with all, Venice ſecured herſelf againſt her powerful neighbours; ſhe diſſembled with Auſtria, attached her-

ſelf ſecretly to France, kept a watchful eye over the proceedings of the pope, fought and negociated alternately with the Turk her moſt formidable neighbour. All her policy, however, was not proof againſt the deſigns of an obſcure jew, who, after being expelled Portugal, his native country, was cheriſhed in the very boſom of the republic, became her enemy, paſſed over to Conſtantinople, inſinuated himſelf into the favour of a deſpicable ſultan, and perſuaded that weak ſoul to become the tool of his revenge.

CYPRUS, the beſt of the poſſeſſions of Venice, was attacked; the cities of that iſland were reduced by the immenſe ſuperiority of the beſiegers, notwithſtanding the heroic efforts of the beſieged; and the immortal Bragadin, who, in the defence of Famaguſte, diſplayed a valour worthy of the greateſt rewards, was put to death with tortures by the inhuman conquerors.

THE victory of Lepanto gave the ſenate, at firſt, ſome hopes of repairing their misfortunes, but ſerved only to convince them of the vanity of their confidence in a jealous ally; they yielded to neceſſity, and, by a prudent ceſſion of provinces, which they could not hope to preſerve, purchaſed the concluſion of a war, that might prove fatal to the ſtate. Thoſe ſtorms were ſucceeded by a long calm, which was undiſturbed but by the reſtleſs attempts of the court of Rome. They roſe to a degree of violence under Paul V, who endeavoured to annul the decrees made againſt the exceſſive acquiſitions of the clergy, and deprive ſovereigns

of

of the natural right of punishing their subjects, when consecrated to the altar.

The resolution of the senate displayed itself on this occasion; the thunders of the vatican fell without effect; the indterdict of the pontiff was not executed, the most severe edicts banished those who declared openly for Rome, prevented the designs of her secret friends, and obliged the clergy to discharge their duty. Paul, alarmed at the temerity of his proceedings, and forced to give way to those republicans, thought himself fortunate to find a powerful protector in Henry, and in the deputies of that prince able mediators, who preserved to him the appearance of superiority in his defeat.

FLORENCE.

Florence had lost every idea of liberty, but found some consolation under the government of Cosmo II, by whose capacity, justice flourished within the walls of that city, and his dominions were enlarged by the acquisition of Sienna, formerly the rival of his country. Respected no less by his neighbours, than beloved by his subjects, he obtained from the pope the title of Grand Duke, which the emperor refused to acknowlege.

The title Rome had conferred on the father, was confirmed however by the court of Vienna to his son and successor Francis: but the weak administration of this prince, produced disorders in the state, and he died by poison that his consort had prepared for his brother. Ferdinand

reaped

reaped the fruits of the crime intended againſt him, ſhewed himſelf a reſpectable ſovereign, and ſaw his daughter Mary of Medicis become the conſort of a hero who aſcended the throne of France.

PARMA, MODENA AND MANTUA.

The Houſe of Farneſe acquired new luſtre by the exploits of the duke Alexander. Placentia, that had been taken from his anceſtors by Charles V, was reſtored to him, but it was a poor recompence for the ſervices of that commander. The Gonzagos reigned at Mantua by a blind condeſcenſion for the court of Madrid. The extinction of the eldeſt branch of the houſe of Eſt occaſioned an important diſpute in Modena.

Cæsar of Eſt, the offspring of a ſecret marriage, claimed the ſucceſſion to which he was intitled by the rights of nature and the will of the deceaſed. The Pontiff oppoſed his pretentions on account of ſome deficiency in the forms, urged the laws relative to fiefs, and employing force in the place of juſtice, ſeized upon the important city of Ferrara; but the prince met with more equity at the imperial court and obtained the inveſture of Modena and Reggio, where his poſterity ſtill reign.

SAVOY.

The blood of Savoy continued prolific of great men. Emanuel Philibert, after acquiring immortal glory at St. Quintin, the favourite of Spain,

Spain, the terror of France, and eſteemed by both ſovereigns, was reſtored to his dominions by the peace of Cambray, and governed with wiſdom as he had fought with valour. Seduced by urgent ſolicitations, he for a moment loſt ſight of prudence and perſecuted the people of Vaux who had adopted new opinions, but he ſoon reſumed a more worthy conduct; from a perſuaſion that whatever may be the ſentiments of a ſubject, he merits the protection of his prince as long as he is virtuous and faithful, he left thoſe harmleſs people to live according to their own doctrine, and made them equal ſharers with the reſt of his ſubjects in his paternal cares and attention. He augmented his poſſeſſions by the acquiſition of Oneglia, became the arbiter of his neighbours, and in a happy old age terminated a long and prudent reign.

With a profound knowlege of ſtate-policy, a mind inexhauſtible in expedients, impenetrable ſecrecy, a pliancy of diſpoſition that readily adapted itſelf to every occaſion, and boundleſs ambition ſeconded by a variety of great talents, Charles Emanuel had indeed a bright but tumultuous reign. Attentive to take advantage of the troubles of France, he ſeized upon the marquiſate of Saluces, menaced Provence which he in fact invaded, and failed in his deſigns upon Dauphiny but through the obſtacles he met with from the valour and experience of Leſdiguieres. Finding it neceſſary to alter his meaſures, when a victorious prince aſcended the throne of France, he exhauſted all the fineſſe of policy in order to

preſerve

preſerve by art what he had acquired by violence. He repaired to the court of the monarch, ſtudied the courtiers, changed his language and manners according to their various characters, flattered, bribed and ſpread the ſeeds of diſſidence and oppoſition among them. Seeing all his ſchemes fruſtrated by the ſteady conduct of the ſovereign, and obliged to ſubmit to a compenſation, he ſtill gained an advantage by preſerving the marquiſate of Saluces. That country was of the greateſt importance to him, as it was in a manner the key to all his poſſeſſions.

All his neighbours were ſenſible of the effect of his intrigues; the Swiſs were uneaſy, and Geneva ſurprized by his arts narrowly eſcaped falling under the yoke. The capacity of this prince was truly admirable, but he meritted cenſure for the miſapplication of his talents. Hiſtory honours him with the ſirname of *Great*; but his father had a much better claim to the title, if it is true that virtues conducive to the happineſs of mankind, are more worthy of our veneration than qualities, however ſpeciouſly bright, that diſturb the peace of ſociety.

LORRAINE.

Lorraine was quiet and happy under Chrles II, who had been educated at the court of the princes of the Houſe of Valvis, where he acquired a taſte for the ſciences. During a long reign he endeavoured to make them flouriſh in his dominions; he founded univerſities, and at

the

the ſame time kept a watchful eye on the ſituation of the powerful monarchy, by which he was ſurrounded. He was ſon-in-law to Henry II, and ſaw with uneaſineſs his relations, the Guiſes, uſing endeavours to uſurp the crown, to which his ſons had more juſt pretenſions. But when the victories of the family of Bourbon had diſpelled his hopes and fears, he became a ſincere friend to Henry, and devoted all his attention to the improvement of his people. He was ſucceeded by his ſon Henry *the Good*, a weak prince without talents; but in his boundleſs goodneſs all his imperfections were forgotten.

SWITZERLAND.

The Swiſs, quiet at home, and in peace with all other powers, took no part in the troubles of their neighbours. When Henry IV had diſperſed the factions that oppoſed him, they made it a duty to renew a ſtrict alliance with that prince, and this friendſhip was rivetted more ſtrongly by the reciprocal candour and courage of both parties.

GENEVA.

Geneva, entirely liberated from the yoke of her ancient maſters, was remarkable for her auſterity of manners, ſupported herſelf by induſtry, was diſtinguiſhed for the great men ſhe produced or adopted, attached herſelf cloſely to Switzerland, obtained the protection of France, and bid defiance to the attempts of Savoy. The

night

night of the Eſcalade will be for ever celebrated in the annals of this city. Some gentlemen of the court of Turin, ſecretly encouraged by their prince, and followed by a few reſolute ſoldiers, taking advantage of the ſecurity of peace ſcaled the walls of the city, and were on the point of taking the place. The alarm however was accidentally given, and ſuddenly rouzed the citizens: men, women, and children, of every age, all became ſoldiers on this occaſion; the paſſion for liberty transformed every citizen into a hero; they repulſed the foreign invaders, ſeized upon their leaders, and, by a ſevere but juſt puniſhment, for ever deterred the moſt daring from any future attempt to enſlave them. This completely ſecured their independence; Charles Emanuel was obliged to diſavow the undertaking he had authoriſed and encouraged, and Geneva enjoyed a tranquility for which ſhe was as much indebted to her own prudence as to the protection of other ſtates.

TURKY.

TURKY began to appear triumphant under the greateſt of her Sultans. In Perſia, in Hungary, in Africa, along the coaſts of Italy and thoſe of Spain, the armies and fleets of Soliman ſpread terror, and extended the limits of the empire. A ſingle check interrupted the courſe of this great proſperity. This prince was in hopes that the ſame fortune which gave him victory at Rhodes, would follow him to Malta, and ſubject the intrepid defenders of that place

to his arms. Forty-thouſand land troops, and immenſe preparations ſeemed to preſage the neceſſity of a ſecond retreat to the knights; but La Valette, animating them by his council and example, made the order he commanded invincible. A ſingle rock braved all the forces of the Eaſt, renewed the wonders of ancient Athens, and after a bloody conteſt of ſix months the Ottomans fled with the ruins of their fleets

THE great Soliman was obliged to turn his arms elſewhere in ſearch of victory. He entered Hungary again, drove the Auſtrians before him, and, notwithſtanding his very advanced age, laid ſiege to Zigeth, where death cloſed the ſcene of his triumphs, and victory, that had ſo long accompanied him through life, ſtill ſhot forth her glorious beams at his exit. He was a ſober, juſt, benevolent, affable, magnificent and enlightened prince. He poliſhed his ſubjects by leading them to glory, and, for the firſt time, diſplayed in the Ottoman family, ſocial virtue united with the moſt heroic valour. This Sultan, though educated in deſpotiſm and war, had a heart ſuſceptible of a tender and delicate paſſion; Roxelana poſſeſſed his affections without a rival; he choſe rather to ſubject the pride of the throne to the ambition of that woman, than offer the leaſt violence ro her deſires; exceſſive condeſcenſion to her was his only fault, ſhe prevailed upon him to put Muſtapha the moſt virtuous of his ſons to death; and ſhe occaſioned the revolt of another, whom he was obliged to ſacri-

fice

fice to his own ſafety. Notwithſtanding thoſe ſhades in the character of Soliman, he has always been an object of veneration with the Turks; they ſtill commemorate with regret the glory and happineſs of ſo illuſtrious a reign. Both were eclipſed for ever in the tomb of that prince. The Ottoman power, then raiſed to the ſubmit of greatneſs, has been continually declining ever ſince by the effeminacy and negligence of the ſultans. Thoſe princes, ſhut up in the ſeraglio, and entirely devoted to ſenſual pleaſures, leave the cares of government to miniſters created by paſſion or caprice.

Selim II, firnamed *the Drunkard*, the unworthy ſon of Soliman, began to enervate the empire by relaxing the courage of his ſubjects. The ſtate, however, ſtill ſubſiſted by its natural weight and ſtrength; it was even increaſed by the conqueſt of the Iſland of Cyprus; and this important acquiſition was made only by the deſire of drinking the delicate wines of the country; but the marine ſuffered an irreparable loſs at Lepanto, where a memorable battle was fought, the event of which ſaved Italy and made Conſtantinople tremble.

Amvrat III, a prince equally debauched and cruel, began his reign with ſtrangling his brothers, perſecuted the chriſtians with barbarous rage, had ſome ſucceſs againſt the Perſians, and being defeated by the Auſtrians made a ſhameful treaty with their emperor. Mahomet III, terrible in the ſeraglio, deſpiſed in the camp, ſtained with blood and plunged in debauchery,

was

with contempt and hatred. Achmet I, equally indolent and effiminate as his two predeceſſors, made no efforts to prevent the empire from being weakened or diſmembered; and looked on with ſtupid indifference, while the the Janiſſaries were augmenting a power that afterwards proved fatal to himſelf.

PERSIA.

THE father of the Sophis, and founder of a new monarchy had the ſame fate as his rival Soliman. The deſcendents of Iſhmael were unworthy of ſucceeding him. They ſhewed nothing but barbarity and effeminacy in government, tyranny at home, and weakneſs with other nations. Such was Thamas of whom it is ſaid that he never quitted the ſeraglio for ten years. Iſhmael II, was educated in a priſon, and thence raiſed to the throne, where he diſtinguiſhed himſelf only by his vices. Cudabandes ſignalized his reign by nothing but the murder of his three brothers. Emir was aſſaſſinated as ſoon as he was crowned. Iſhmael III, periſhed by the intrigues of his concubines and barber.

AFTER him a ſplendid reign appeared. Schah Abas triumphed over the Turks, ſubjected the Tartars, drove the Ruſſians beyond the Caſpian Sea, extended the boundaries of Perſia, repreſſed the inſolence of the great, and re-eſtabliſhed tranquillity by enſlaving his country. This monarch, the moſt illuſtrious of the Sophis, was

looked upon as the reſtorer of the ſtate and obtained the ſirname of *Great*. Conſidered as a conqueror only, he in fact meritted that title, but he was unworthy of any notice from mankind. If we view him in the character of a man and a king, he was a monſter of ingratitude; he not only put to death a virtuous governor, to whom he was indebted for his ſcepter and life, but maſſacred all the relations of that miniſter. He was an inhuman and unnatural father; he ſacrificed one of his ſons upon a bare ſuſpicion, and put out the eyes of two others. He was one of the moſt cruel tyrants that ever exiſted, governed his people with a ſcepter of iron, oppreſſed them with taxes and butchered thouſands of his ſubjects. If he reſtored any tranquillity to Perſia, it was by deluging the country with blood.

BRITISH
7 DE 85
MUSEUM

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.